# Positive Cones and $L_{p}$ Spaces for von Neumann Algebras 

By<br>Huzihiro Araki* and Tetsuya Masuda*


#### Abstract

The $L_{p}$-space $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for a von Neumann algebra $M$ with reference to its cyclic and separating vector $\eta$ in the standard representation Hilbert space $H$ of $M$ is constructed either as a subset of $H$ (for $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$ ), or as the completion of $H$ (for $1 \leqq p<2$ ) with an explicitly defined $L_{p}$-norm. The Banach spaces $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for different reference vector $\eta$ (with the same $p$ ) are isomorphic.

Any $L_{p}$ element has a polar decomposition where the positive part $L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)$ is defined to be either the intersection with the positive cone $V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)}$ (for $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$ ) or the completion of the positive cone $V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)}$ (for $1 \leqq p<2$ ). Any positive element has an interpretation as the $(1 / p)^{t h}$ power $\omega^{1 / p}$ of an $\omega \in M^{+}$with its $L_{p}$-norm given by $\|\omega\|^{1 / p}$.

Product of an $L_{p}$ element and an $L_{q}$ element is explicitly defined as an $L_{r}$ element with $r^{-1}=p^{-1}+q^{-1}$ provided that $1 \leqq r$, and the Hölder inequality is proved.

The $L_{p}$-space constructed here is isomorphic to those defined by Haagerup, Hilsum, and Kosaki.

As a corollary, any normal state of $M$ is shown to have one and only one vector representative in the positive cone $V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ for each $\alpha \in[0,1 / 4]$.


## § 1. Main Results

The $L_{p}$-space $L_{p}(M, \tau)$ of a semifinite von Neumann algebra $M$ with respect to a normal trace $\tau$ is defined as the linear space of those closed operators which are affiliated with $M$ and satisfy the condition $\|x\|_{p}$ $=\tau\left(|x|^{p}\right)^{1 / p}<\infty$. ([20]. Also see [18].) Extension to non semifinite cases have been worked out by Haagerup [11], Hilsum [12], and Kosaki [15], [16]. We shall present another version of such an extension with emphasis on defining them on the Hilbert space where $M$ is acting rather than going over to the crossed product of $M$ with the modular action.

We shall construct the $L_{p}$-space $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ with reference to a cyclic and separating vector $\eta$ in the standard representation Hilbert space $H$ of

* Research Institute for Mathematical Sciences, Kyoto University, Kyoto 606, Japan.
a general ( $\sigma$-finite) von Neumann algebra $M$ utilizing the relative modular operator $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}$ of a normal semifinite weight $\phi$ on $M$, which is defined as follows:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Delta_{\phi, \eta}=S_{\phi, \eta}^{*} \overline{S_{\phi, \eta}},  \tag{1.1}\\
& S_{\phi, \eta} x \eta=\xi_{\phi}\left(x^{*}\right), \quad x \in N_{\phi}^{*}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\overline{S_{\phi, \eta}}$ is the closure of $S_{\phi, \eta}, N_{\phi}$ is the set of $x \in M$ satisfying $\phi\left(x^{*} x\right)$ $<\infty$ and $\xi_{\phi}(x)$ is the GNS vector representation of $x \in N_{\phi}$ in $H_{\phi}$ $=\overline{N_{\phi} / \operatorname{ker} \phi}$ based on the weight $\phi$. If $\phi$ is a vector state $\omega_{\xi}$ with $\xi \in H$, then $\xi_{\phi}(x)=x \xi$ and we denote $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}$ also as $\Delta_{\xi, \eta}$. The support of $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}$ is the support $s(\phi)$ of $\phi$ and $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{z}$ is defined as the sum of 0 on $(1-s(\phi)) H$ and the usual power of positive selfadjoint operator $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}$ on $s(\phi) H$.

For $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$, we define the $L_{p}$-space as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{p}(M, \eta)=\left\{\zeta \in \bigcap_{\xi \in H} D\left(\Lambda_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\right):\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}<\infty\right\} \tag{1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\sup _{\|\xi\|=1}\left\|\Delta_{\tilde{\xi}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta\right\| . \tag{1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $1 \leqq p<2$, we define the $L_{p}$-space $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ as the completion of $H$ with the following $L_{p}$-norm:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\inf \left\{\| \|_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\right\}\|:\| \xi \|=1, s^{M}(\xi) \geqq s^{M}(\zeta)\right\} \tag{1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $s^{n I}$ denotes the $M$-support of a vector (the smallest projection in $M$ leaving the vector invariant), $\left\|\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta\right\|$ is defined to be $+\infty$ if $\zeta$ is not in the domain of $\int_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}$ and we prove in Lemma 7.1 (1) that any $\zeta \in H$ is in $D\left(\Delta_{\zeta, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\right)$ if $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$.

For any $x \in M$ and $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta) \cap H, x \zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $\|x \zeta\|_{p}^{(n)}$ $\leqq\|x\|\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(n)}$. Therefore the multiplication of $x \in M$ can be defined for any $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ by continuous extension.

## Theorem 1.

(1) The formulae (1.4) and (1.5) define a norm for each $p$ $(1 \leqq p \leqq \infty)$ and $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is a Banach $M$-module.
(2) Assume that $p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1$, then the sesquilinear form $(\zeta$, $\left.\zeta^{\prime}\right)$ for $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta) \cap H, \zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta) \cap H$ can be uniquely extended to a continuous sesquilinear form on $L_{p}(M, \eta) \times L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ (denoted by
$\langle\rangle,(\eta)$, through which $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is the dual of $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ if $1<p \leqq \infty$.
(3) The norm satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\sup \left\{i\left\langle\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)} \mid: \zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta),\left\|\zeta^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{\prime}}^{(\eta)} \leqq 1\right\} \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1$ and $1 \leqq p \leqq \infty$.
(4) For $2 \leqq p<\infty$ and $\zeta_{1}, \zeta_{2} \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$, the following Clarkson's inequality holds:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(\left\|\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(ग)}\right)^{p}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(j)}\right)^{p}  \tag{1.7}\\
& \quad \leqq 2^{p-1}\left\{\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}\right)^{p}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(7)}\right)^{p}\right\} .
\end{align*}
$$

The $L_{p}$-spaces for different reference vectors $\eta$ are related as follows.

Theorem 2. There exists a family of conjugate linear isometry $J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ and linear isometry $\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ from $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ onto $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$ satisfying the following relations:
(1) For $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$, and $\zeta \in L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) \zeta=J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}} \Delta_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta \quad\left(\in L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)\right)  \tag{1.8}\\
& \tau_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)=J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta\right) J_{p}\left(\eta, \eta_{1}\right) \tag{1.9}
\end{align*}
$$

where (1.9) is independent of a cyclic and separating vector $\eta$ and $J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}$ is obtained by the polar decomposition $\bar{S}_{\phi, \eta}=J_{\phi, \eta} \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2}$ (see (1.2)).
(2) For $p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1, \zeta \in L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ and $\zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p^{\prime}}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\langle J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) \zeta_{,}, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{\left(\eta_{2}\right)}=\left\langle J_{p^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}\right) \zeta^{\prime}, \zeta\right\rangle_{\left(\eta_{1}\right)},  \tag{1.10}\\
& \left\langle\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) \zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{\left(\eta_{2}\right)}=\left\langle\zeta, \tau_{p^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}\right) \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{\left(\eta_{1}\right)},
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{3}, \eta_{2}\right) \tau_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)=\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{3}, \eta_{1}\right) \tag{1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

The cones

$$
\begin{equation*}
V_{\eta}^{\alpha}=\text { the closure of } \Delta_{\eta}^{\alpha} M_{+} \eta \quad(0 \leqq \alpha \leqq 1 / 2) \tag{1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

defined in [2] can be used to define the positive part $L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)$ as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)=L_{p}(M, \eta) \cap V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)} \quad \text { for } \quad 2 \leqq p \leqq \infty \tag{1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)=L_{p} \text {-closure of } V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)} \text { for } 1 \leqq p<2 . \tag{1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we have the following polar decomposition theorem.

## Theorem 3.

(1) Any $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ has the unique polar decomposition $\zeta=u|\zeta|_{p}$, where $u$ is a partial isometry in $M$ satisfying $u u^{*}=s^{M}(\zeta)$ (equivalently, $\left.u^{*} u=s^{u}\left(|\zeta|_{p}\right)\right)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\xi|_{p}=u^{*} \zeta \in L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta) . \tag{1.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here, $s^{M}(\zeta)$ is the $M$-support of $\zeta$, namely the smallest projection $P \in M$ such that $P \zeta=\zeta$.
(2) Under the identification of $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ and $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$ by $\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$, the above polar decomposition is independent of $\eta$.
(3) $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\text {( ) }}=\left\||\zeta|_{p}\right\|_{p}^{(\text {( })}$
(4) If $\zeta \in L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)$, there exists a unique $\phi \in M_{*}^{+}$such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1, p} \eta \tag{1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

if $2 \leqq p<\infty$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta, \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{(1 / p)-(1 / 2)} \zeta^{\prime}\right) \tag{1.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $\zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta), p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1$ if $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$. For such unique $\phi$, $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(n)}=\phi(1)^{1 / p}$. If $\zeta \in L_{\infty}^{+}(M, \eta)$, there exists a unique $x \in M^{+}$such that $\zeta=x \eta$. For such $x,\|\zeta\|_{\infty}^{(n)}=\|x\|$.

We may symbolically write

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta=u \phi^{1 / p} \tag{1.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

if $|\zeta|_{p}$ is given either by (1.17) or (1.18).
Special cases $p=\infty$ and $p=1$ reduce to well-known objects.

## Theorem 4.

(1) The map $x \in M \mapsto x \eta \in H$ is an isometric isomorphism from $M$ onto $L_{\infty}(M, \eta)$.
(2) The map from $\zeta \in L_{1}(M, \eta)$ to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(x)=\left\langle\zeta, x^{*} \eta\right\rangle_{(\eta)} \quad(x \in M) \tag{1.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

is an isometric isomorphism from $L_{1}(M, \eta)$ onto $M_{*}$, where the inner product in (1.20) is the one given by Theorem 1 (2) for $p=1$.

From definition, $L_{2}(M, \eta)$ is $H$, independent of $\eta$.
For the definition of the product, we use the following Lemma.

Lemma A. For $x_{0}, \cdots, x_{n} \in M, \phi_{1}, \cdots, \phi_{n} \in M_{*}^{+}$and complex numbers $z=\left(z_{1}, \cdots, z_{n}\right)$ in the tube domain

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{1}^{(n)}=\left\{z \in \mathbb{C}^{n}: \operatorname{Re} z_{j} \geqq 0 \quad j=1, \cdots, n, \sum_{j=1}^{n} \operatorname{Re} z_{j} \leqq 1\right\} \tag{1.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

the expression
(1.22) $\quad F(z)$

$$
=\left(\Delta_{\phi_{j, \eta}}^{z_{j}^{\prime}} x_{j} \Delta_{\phi_{j+1}, \eta}^{z_{j+1}} x_{j+1} \cdots x_{n} \eta, \Delta_{\phi_{j}, \eta}^{z_{j}^{\prime}} x_{j-1}^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{j-1}, \eta}^{z_{j-1}} x_{j-2}^{*} \cdots x_{0}^{*} \eta\right)
$$

is well-defined and independent of the division $z_{j}=z_{j}^{\prime}+z_{j}^{\prime \prime}$ if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Re} z_{1}+\cdots+\operatorname{Re} z_{j-1}+\operatorname{Re} z_{j}^{\prime \prime} \leqq 1 / 2, \operatorname{Re} z_{j}^{\prime \prime} \geqq 0, \tag{1.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Re} z_{n}+\cdots+\operatorname{Re} z_{j+1}+\operatorname{Re} z_{j}^{\prime} \leqq 1 / 2, \operatorname{Re} z_{j}^{\prime} \geqq 0 \tag{1.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

It defines a function of $z=\left(z_{1}, \cdots, z_{n}\right)$ which is
(i) holomorphic in the interior of $I_{1}^{(n)}$,
(ii) continuous on $I_{1}^{(n)}$, and
(iii) bounded on $I_{1}^{(n)}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
|F(z)| \leqq\left(\prod_{j=0}^{n}\left\|x_{j}\right\|\right) \omega_{\eta}(1)^{z_{0}}\left(\prod_{j=1}^{n} \phi_{j}(1)^{\operatorname{Re} z_{j}}\right) \tag{1.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\quad z_{0}=1-\sum_{j=1}^{n} \operatorname{Re} z_{j}$.
(iv) Denote

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(z)=\omega_{\eta}\left(x_{0} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \eta}^{z_{1}} x_{1} \cdots d_{\phi n, \eta}^{z n} x_{n}\right) . \tag{1.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $x_{j}=x_{j}^{\prime} x_{j}^{\prime \prime}$ with $x_{j}^{\prime}, x_{j}^{\prime \prime} \in M$ and $z_{0}=1-\sum_{i=1}^{n} z_{l}$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
& \omega_{\eta}\left(x_{0} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \eta}^{z_{1}} x_{1} \cdots \Delta_{\phi_{n}, \eta}^{z_{n}} x_{n}\right)  \tag{1.27}\\
& \quad=\omega_{\eta}\left(x_{j}^{\prime \prime} \Delta_{\phi_{j+1}, \eta}^{z_{j 1}} x_{j+1} \cdots \Delta_{\phi_{n}}^{z_{n}} x_{n} \Delta_{\eta}^{z_{0}} x_{0} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \eta}^{z_{1}} x_{1} \cdots \Delta_{\phi_{j}, \eta}^{z,} x_{j}^{\prime}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

(Multiple-time KMS condition.)
(v) $F(z)$ is multilinear in $x_{0}, \cdots, x_{n}$.
(vi) $F(z)$ is continuous in $\left(x_{0}, \cdots, x_{n}, \phi_{1}, \cdots, \phi_{n}, \eta\right)$ relative to ${ }^{*}$. strong topology of $x$ 's and norm topology of $\phi$ 's and $\eta$, provided that
$x$ 's are restricted to a bounded set. The continuity is uniform in $z$ 's provided that $z$ 's are restricted to a compact set.
(vii) If $\sum_{j=1}^{n} z_{j}=1$, then $F(z)$ is independent of $\eta$.

If $r^{-1}=\sum_{j=1}^{n}\left(p_{j}\right)^{-1}, r^{-1}+\left(r^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1, \zeta_{j} \in L_{p_{j}}(M, \eta), x_{j} \in M \quad(j=0, \cdots$, $n$ ), and $\zeta_{j}=u_{j} \phi_{j}^{1 / p_{j}}(j=1, \cdots, n)$ is the polar decomposition, then the product

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta=x_{0} \zeta_{1} x_{1} \zeta_{2} \cdots \zeta_{n} x_{n} \in L_{r}(M, \eta) \quad\left(=L_{r^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}\right) \tag{1.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

is defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=\omega_{\eta}\left(\Delta_{\phi^{\prime}, \eta}^{1 / r^{\prime}} u^{\prime *} x_{0} u_{1} \Delta_{\phi_{1, n}}^{1 / p_{1}} x_{1} \cdots u_{n} \Delta_{\phi_{n}, \eta}^{1 / p_{n}} x_{n}\right) \tag{1.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\zeta^{\prime} \in L_{r^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ and $\zeta^{\prime}=u^{\prime} \phi^{\prime 1 / r^{\prime}}$ is its polar decomposition.

Theorem 5. The product (1.28) is multilinear and satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\zeta\|_{r}^{(\eta)} \leqq\left(\prod_{j=0}^{n}\left\|x_{j}\right\|\right) \prod_{j=1}^{n}\left\|\zeta_{j}\right\|_{p_{j}}^{(n)} \tag{1.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

A polar decomposition different from Theorem 3 is given by the following.

Theorem 6. Any $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ has the unique polar decomposition

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta=\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}+i\left(\zeta_{3}-\zeta_{4}\right) \tag{1.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\zeta_{j} \in L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta), s^{M}\left(\zeta_{1}\right) \perp s^{M}\left(\zeta_{2}\right)$ and $s^{M}\left(\zeta_{3}\right) \perp s^{M}\left(\zeta_{4}\right)$. Here $s^{M}(\zeta)$ is the $M$-support of $\zeta$, i.e. the smallest projection $P \in M$ such that $P \zeta=\zeta$.

The polar decompositions have versions appropriate for the positive cone $V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ itself.

## Theorem 7.

(1) Any $\zeta$ in the domain of $\Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}(0 \leqq \alpha \leqq 1 / 2)$ has the polar decomposition $\zeta=u|\zeta|_{\alpha}$ where $u$ is a partial isometry in $M$ satisfying $u u^{*}=s^{M}(\zeta)$ (or equivalently $\left.u^{*} u=s^{M}\left(|\zeta|_{\alpha}\right)\right),|\zeta|_{\alpha} \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ and $|\zeta|_{\alpha}=d_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha} \eta$ for
some $\phi \in M_{*}$ if $0<\alpha \leqq 1 / 2$ and $|\zeta|_{0}=$ Tท for a positive selfadjoint operator $T$ affiliated with $M$. Such $\zeta$ can be written also as $\zeta=u^{\prime}|\zeta|^{\prime}{ }_{\alpha}$ where $u^{\prime}$ is a partial isometry in $M^{\prime}, u^{\prime} u^{\prime *}=s^{M^{\prime}}(\zeta)$ (or equivalently $\left.u^{\prime *} u^{\prime}=s^{M^{\prime}}\left(|\zeta|^{\prime}{ }_{\alpha}\right)\right)$ and $|\zeta|^{\prime}{ }_{\alpha} \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$.
(2) For $1 / 4 \leqq \alpha \leqq 1 / 2$, any $\zeta$ in $H$ has the unique polar decomposition $\zeta=u|\zeta|_{\alpha}$ where $u$ is a partial isometry in $M$ satisfying u** $=s^{M}(\zeta)$ (or equivalently $u^{*} u=s^{n I}\left(|\zeta|_{\alpha}\right)$ ) and $|\zeta|_{\alpha} \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$. For $1 / 4 \geqq \alpha^{\prime}$ $\geqq 0$, any $\zeta$ in $H$ has the unique decomposition $\zeta=u^{\prime}|\zeta|^{\prime}{ }_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ where $u^{\prime}$ is a partial isometry in $M^{\prime}$ satisfying $u^{\prime} u^{\prime *}=s^{M^{\prime}}(\zeta)$ (or equivalently $\left.u^{\prime *} u^{\prime}=s^{n^{\prime}}\left(|\zeta|^{\prime}{ }_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right)\right)$ and $|\zeta|^{\prime}{ }_{\alpha^{\prime}} \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha^{\prime}}$.
(3) Any $\zeta \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ for $1 / 4 \leqq \alpha \leqq 1 / 2$ has the form $\zeta=d_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha} \eta$ where $\phi \in M_{*}^{+}, \eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha}\right)$, and $\phi$ is uniquely determined by $\zeta$.
(4) Any $\zeta$ in the domain of $\Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}(0 \leqq \alpha \leqq 1 / 2)$ has the unique decomposition,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta=\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}+i\left(\zeta_{3}-\zeta_{4}\right) \tag{1.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\zeta_{1}, \cdots, \zeta_{4} \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ and
(1.33a) $\quad s^{M}\left(\zeta_{1}\right) \perp s^{M}\left(\zeta_{2}\right), s^{M}\left(\zeta_{3}\right) \perp s^{M}\left(\zeta_{4}\right) \quad$ for $\quad 1 / 4 \leqq \alpha \leqq 1 / 2$,
(1.33b) $\quad s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\zeta_{1}\right) \perp s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\zeta_{2}\right), s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\zeta_{3}\right) \perp s^{M^{\prime \prime}}\left(\zeta_{4}\right) \quad$ for $\quad 0 \leqq \alpha \leqq 1 / 4$.

If $\alpha=1 / 4$, the two decompositions coincide.

Corollary. Any $\phi \in M_{*}^{+}$has a unique vector representative $\xi_{\eta}^{\alpha}(\phi)$ $\in V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ for each $\alpha \in[0,1 / 4]$, i.e.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(x \xi_{\eta}^{\alpha}(\phi), \xi_{\eta}^{\alpha}(\phi)\right)=\phi(x) \quad(x \in M) . \tag{1.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

Our strategy for proof of the above main results is first to show that $L_{p}(M, \eta), 2 \leqq p<\infty$, which is a subset of $H$ in our approach, is a uniformly convex (hence reflexive) $M$-module and $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ has a unique polar decomposition $\zeta=u|\zeta|_{p}^{(\eta)}$ with $|\zeta|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta_{\eta} \in V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)}, \phi \in M_{*}^{+}$ and $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\phi(1)^{1 / p}$. Then $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for $2 \geqq p>1$ can easily be identified with the dual $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$ where $\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}+p^{-1}=1, L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)$ being exactly the polar of $L_{p^{\prime}}^{+}(M, \eta)$ and the polar decomposition $\zeta=u|\zeta|_{p}^{(\eta)}$ of $\zeta \in$ $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ being derived from that of $\zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ achieving "maximum" inner product with $\zeta$.

Our main tool is the relative modular operator (defined by (1.1) and (1.2)) which has been used previously in [6], [7]. (Also see [5], [10].) In Appendix C, we collect its properties relevant to our application and provide a brief outline of their proof.

Main lemma providing a control over the unbounded relative modular operator is its domain properties and Hölder type inequality given by Lemma A (stated in Section 1 and proved in Appendix A). This lemma originates in the multiple time KMS condition first found in [1], where it is formulated in terms of boundary values of time correlation functions (rather than modular operators). The present form is a straightforward generalization of Theorem 3.1 and Theorem 3.2 in [3]. (Also see [13].)

The set $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$ of certain formal monomials of elements of $M$ and complex powers (with positive real parts) of relative modular operators ( $p$ specifying the sum of real parts of powers not to exceed $1-p^{-1}$ $\left.=\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\right)$ and its subset $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ are introduced in Section 2. In fact the set $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ consists of $A=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}, \phi \in M_{*}^{+}$, which will be identified with $A \eta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for $2 \leqq p<\infty$ and with an element of $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ with $L_{p}$ norm $\phi(1)^{1 / p}$ and having the "maximal inner product" with $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p_{\eta}^{\prime}} \eta$ in $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ for $2 \geqq p>1$. $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$ is introduced here for the purpose of defining products of elements of $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $L_{q}(M, \eta)$, which is technically used in the proof of uniform strong differentiability in Section 9 and is fully treated in Section 12. Lemma $A$ enables us to define an "inner product" $\langle A, B\rangle_{(\eta)}$ between $A \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $B \in \mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$, which coincides with $(A \eta, B \eta)$ in $H$ whenever $\eta$ is in domains of $A$ and $B$. This leads to an identification of $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$ (modulo an equivalence) with $L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ (after $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)=L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is shown by polar decomposition) (in Section 7) and also to the Hölder inequality for the above mentioned product (in Section 12).

In Section 3, the polar decomposition of a vector $\zeta$ in the domain of $\Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}$, in the form $\zeta=u|\zeta|_{p}^{(\eta)},|\zeta|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta$ with a partial isometry $u$ in $M$ and a normal semifinite weight $\phi$ on $M$, is derived by an application of Carlson's theorem, a technique used in [4]. Here the Connes characterization of unitary Randon-Nikodym cocycle is used in the form discussed in Appendix B, where we allow non-faithful normal semifinite weights.

As an immediate application of results in Section 3, we obtain existence and uniqueness of polar decomposition of $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)(2 \leqq p<\infty)$ as above with $\phi \in M_{*}^{+}$and the formula $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(n)}=\phi(1)^{1 / p}$ in Section 4. At the same time, the set of $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta$ with $\phi \in M_{*}^{+}$is identified with $L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)$ defined by (1.14).

In Section 5 , we show that $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for $p=1$ and $\infty$ are canonically identified with $M_{*}$ and $M$.

In Section 6, we prove the completeness of $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for $2 \leqq p<\infty$ by using an easily provable inequality between $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(m)}$ and the norm $\|\zeta\|$ in $H$.

In Section 7, we derive a few technical lemmas related to $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$ introduced in Section 2. They provide useful tools in subsequent two sections, where Clarkson's inequality (and hence the uniform convexity) and uniform strong differentiability of the norm (and hence the uniform convexity of the dual space) are proved for $L_{p}(M, \eta)$, $2 \leqq p<\infty$.

Once the properties of $L_{p}(M, \eta), 2 \leqq p<\infty$ are established, properties of $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for $1<p<2$ are easily derived in Section 10.

The isomorphism of $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for different reference vectors $\eta$ are established in Section 11. As mentioned earlier, product is treated in Section 12. Linear polar decomposition theorems for $L_{p}$-spaces as well as for $D\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{\alpha}\right)(|\alpha| \leqq 1 / 2)$ are then proved in Section 13.

Section 14 provides a summary of proof of Theorems of Section 1 in terms of Lemmas proved in preceding sections.

A brief discussion of the connection with other works is in Section 15.
In Appendix D, operator monotone function is shown to be applicable also for semibounded operators (or positive forms). This result (in a special case of the function $x^{\nu}, 0 \leqq \nu \leqq 1$ ) is used in Appendix C to derive an inequality for powers of relative modular operators.

## §2. Immediate Consequences of the Multiple-Time KMS Condition

The multiple-time KMS condition has been found to hold for any KMS state in [1], where it is formulated in terms of boundary values
(hence in terms of time translation automorphisms) rather than the modular operators: If all $\phi_{j}$ coincide with $\omega_{\eta}$, then for real $t=\left(t_{1}, \cdots\right.$, $t_{n}$ ),

$$
\begin{align*}
& F(i t)=\omega_{\eta}\left(x_{0} \sigma_{s_{1}}^{\eta}\left(x_{1}\right) \cdots \sigma_{s_{n}}^{\eta}\left(x_{n}\right)\right)  \tag{2.1}\\
& F\left(i t_{1}, \cdots, i t_{j-1}, i t_{j}+1, i t_{j+1}+1, \cdots, i t_{n}+1\right)  \tag{2.2}\\
&=\omega_{\eta}\left(\sigma_{s_{j}}^{\eta}\left(x_{j}\right) \cdots \sigma_{s_{n}}^{\eta}\left(x_{n}\right) x_{0} \sigma_{s_{1}}^{\eta}\left(x_{1}\right) \cdots \sigma_{s_{j-1}}^{\eta}\left(x_{j-1}\right)\right)
\end{align*}
$$

where $s_{k}=t_{1}+\cdots+t_{k}$. The proof of Lemma A which is an adaptation of the proof in [3] will be presented in Appendix A for the sake of completeness. In this section, we discuss immediate consequences of Lemma A, which will be used in subsequent proofs of main results. We use the notation of Lemma A.

Corollary 2.1. If $\eta$ is in the domains of the two operators.

$$
\begin{align*}
& A=\Delta_{\phi_{j}, \eta}^{z^{\prime}} x_{j} \Delta_{\phi_{j+1}, \eta}^{z_{j}, \eta} x_{j+1} \cdots \Delta_{\phi n, \eta}^{z_{n}} x_{n}  \tag{2.3}\\
& B=\Delta_{\phi_{j}^{2}, \eta}^{\overline{z^{\prime \prime}}} x_{j-1}^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{j-1}, \eta}^{\overline{z_{j}},-1} \cdots x_{1}^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \eta}^{\bar{z}_{1}, \eta} x_{0}^{*} \tag{2.4}
\end{align*}
$$

where $z \in I_{1}^{(n)}$ with $z_{j}=z_{j}^{\prime}+z_{j}^{\prime \prime}(1.23)$ and (1.24) of Lemma A are not assumed), then

$$
\begin{equation*}
(A \eta, B \eta)=\omega_{\eta}\left(x_{0} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \eta}^{z_{1}} x_{1} \cdots \Delta_{\phi_{n}, \eta}^{z_{n}} x_{n}\right) . \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Due to $z \in I_{1}^{(n)}$, either (1.23) or (1.24) holds. Suppose (1.23) holds. (The case (1.24) is similar.) Then there exists $k>j$, $\operatorname{Re} z_{k}^{\prime} \geqq 0, \operatorname{Re} z_{k}^{\prime \prime} \geqq 0, z_{k}^{\prime}+z_{k}^{\prime \prime}=z_{k} \quad\left(\right.$ or $\operatorname{Re} w_{j}^{\prime} \geqq 0, \operatorname{Re} w_{j}^{\prime \prime} \geqq 0, w_{j}^{\prime}+w_{j}^{\prime \prime}=z_{j}$ ) such that both (1.23) and (1.24) hold if $j$ is replaced by $k$ (or if $z_{j}^{\prime}$ and $z_{j}^{\prime \prime}$ are replaced by $w_{j}^{\prime}$ and $\left.w_{j}^{\prime \prime}\right)$ and hence $F(z)$ is given by the inner product (1.22) where the same replacement is to be made. The equation (2.5) is then obtained by transposing $x_{l}(j \leqq l<k)$ and appropriate powers of $\Delta_{\phi_{2}, \eta}(j \leqq l \leqq k)$ from one member of the inner product to another.

Lemma 2.2. If $\eta$ is in the domains of the operators,

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{1}=\Delta_{\phi_{j,}, \eta}^{z_{j}^{z}} x_{j} \Delta_{\phi_{j+1}, \eta}^{z_{j+1}} x_{j+1} \cdots \Delta_{\phi_{n, \eta}, \eta}^{z_{n}} x_{n} \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{2}=\Delta_{\psi_{j, \eta}}^{w_{j}^{\eta}} y_{j} \Delta_{\psi_{j+1}, \eta}^{w_{j+1}} y_{j+1} \cdots \Delta_{\psi_{m}, \eta}^{w_{m}} y_{m} \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\operatorname{Re} z_{l} \geqq 0, \operatorname{Re} w_{l} \geqq 0(l \geqq j+1), \operatorname{Re} z_{j}^{\prime \prime} \geqq 0, \operatorname{Re} w_{j}^{\prime \prime} \geqq 0$, and $\phi_{l} \in M_{*}^{+}$, $x_{l} \in M, \psi_{l} \in M_{*}^{+}, y_{l} \in M(l \geqq j)$, and if $A_{1} \eta=A_{2} \eta$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
& \omega_{\eta}\left(x_{0} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \eta}^{z_{1}} x_{1} \cdots \Delta_{\phi_{n}, \eta}^{z_{n}} x_{n}\right)  \tag{2.8}\\
& \quad=\omega_{\eta}\left(x_{0} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \eta}^{z_{1}} x_{1} \cdots x_{j-1} \Delta_{\psi_{j}, \eta}^{w_{j}} y_{j} \cdots \Delta_{\psi_{m, \eta}, \eta}^{w_{m}} y_{m}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

for all $x_{0}, \cdots, x_{j-1} \in M, \quad z_{j}=z_{j}^{\prime}+z_{j}^{\prime \prime}, \quad w_{j}=z_{j}^{\prime}+w_{j}^{\prime \prime}, \quad \phi_{l} \in M_{*}^{+}, \quad \operatorname{Re} z_{l} \geqq 0$ $(l=1, \cdots, j), \operatorname{Re} w_{j} \geqq 0$ and

$$
\sum_{l=1}^{n} \operatorname{Re} z_{l} \leqq 1, \sum_{l=1}^{j-1} \operatorname{Re} z_{l}+\sum_{l=j}^{m} \operatorname{Re} w_{l} \leqq 1
$$

Proof. If $\operatorname{Re} z_{j}^{\prime} \geqq 0$ and $\sum_{l=1}^{j} \operatorname{Re} z_{l} \leqq 1 / 2$, then $\eta$ is also in the domain of B given by (2.4) due to Lemma A. Hence (2.5) and the assumption $A_{1} \eta=A_{2} \eta$ imply (2.8). General case follows from this case by analytic continuation.

## Notation 2. 3.

(1) The set of all formal expressions $A=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}$ with $\phi \in M_{*}^{+}$and a partial isometry $u$ satisfying $u^{*} u=s(\phi)$ (the support projection of $\phi$ ) will be denoted by $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$.
(2) The set of all formal expressions,

$$
\begin{equation*}
B=x_{0} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \eta}^{z_{1}} x_{1} \cdots \Delta_{\phi_{n}, \eta}^{z_{n}} x_{n} \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $x_{j} \in M \quad(j=0, \cdots, n), \phi_{j} \in M_{*}^{+} \quad(j=1, \cdots, n), z=\left(z_{1}, \cdots, z_{n}\right) \in I_{1-(1 / p)}^{(n)}$ will be denoted by $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$ where

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{a}^{(n)}=\left\{z \in \mathbb{C}^{n}: \operatorname{Re} z_{j} \geqq 0 \quad(j=1, \cdots, n), \quad \sum_{j=1}^{n} \operatorname{Re} z_{j} \leqq a\right\} \tag{2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

(3) For $A \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $B \in \mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle B, A\rangle_{(\eta)}=\omega_{\eta}\left(1 \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}\left(u^{*} x_{0}\right) \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \eta}^{\left.z_{1}, x_{1} \cdots d_{\phi_{n}, \eta}^{z_{n}} x_{n}\right), ~}\right. \tag{2.11a}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle A, B\rangle_{(\eta)}=\omega_{\eta}\left(x_{n}^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{n}, \eta}^{z_{n}} \cdots x_{1}^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \eta}^{z_{1}}\left(x_{0}^{*} u\right) \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p_{1}}\right) . \tag{2.11b}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ with $\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1-p^{-1}$ is a subset of $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$, this definition applies also for $B \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$.
(4) For $1 \leqq p \leqq 2, A$ and $B$ in $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$ are said to be eqivalent
if $A \eta=B \eta$. (By Lemma $A, \eta$ is in the domain of $A$ and B.) For $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty, A$ and $B$ in $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$ are said to be equivalent if $\langle C, A\rangle_{(\eta)}$ $\equiv\langle C, B\rangle_{(\eta)}$ for all $C$ in $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$.

Lemma 2.4. If $2 \leqq p<\infty$, then $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta) \subset L_{p}(M, \eta)$ in the sense that $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|u d_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\phi(1)^{1 / p} . \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The bound for $\left\|\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} x \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}\right\|^{2}$ given by Lemma A (iii) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|u d_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}\right\|_{p}^{(1)} \leqq \phi(1)^{1 / p}, \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

in view of the definition (1.4). Let $\xi_{1}$ be the vector representative of $\phi$ and $\xi=u \xi_{1}$. Then the relations (Theorem C. 1 ( $\beta 4$ ))

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{z}=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{z} u^{*},  \tag{2.14}\\
& u^{*} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{z}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{z}, \tag{2.15}
\end{align*}
$$

imply

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta\right\|=\left\|\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta\right\|=\phi(1)^{1 / 2} . \tag{2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

(See (1.1) and (1.2) for the last equality.) Since $\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{z}=\phi(1)^{z} U_{\xi^{\prime}, \eta}^{z}$ for $\xi^{\prime}=\xi /\|\xi\| \quad\left(\|\xi\|^{2}=\phi(1)\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)} \geqq\left\|\Delta_{\xi^{\prime}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)}-(1 / p) u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta\right\|=\phi(1)^{1 / p} . \tag{2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining (2.17) with (2.13), we obtain (2.12).

Lemma 2.5. If $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty, A \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $B \in \mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$ as in Notation 2.3 then,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\langle B, A\rangle_{(\eta)}\right| \leqq\|A \eta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\left(\prod_{l=0}^{n}\left\|x_{i}\right\|\right)\left(\prod_{l=1}^{n} \phi_{l}(1)^{\operatorname{Re} z_{l}}\right) \omega_{\eta}(1)^{\operatorname{Re} z_{0}-(1 / p)} \tag{2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $z_{0}=1-\sum_{i=1}^{n} z_{l}$.

Proof. Immediate from Lemma A (iii).

Lemma 2.6. If $B \in \mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta), A_{i} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta), \eta \in D\left(A_{i}\right) \quad(i=1$,
$\cdots, n)$, and $\sum_{i=1}^{n} A_{i} \eta=0$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left\langle B, A_{i}\right\rangle_{(y)}=0 . \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The same as the proof of Lemma 2.2.

Remark 2.7. Later Lemma 4.1. (i) asserts $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)=L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for $2 \leqq p<\infty$. Lemma 2.5 and Lemma 2.6 then show $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta) \subset$ $L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ for such $p$ (modulo the equivalence relation).

Lemma 2.8. Let $2 \leqq p, q, r \leqq \infty, p^{-1}+q^{-1}+r^{-1}=1, A_{1} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$, $A_{2} \in \mathcal{L}_{q}(M, \eta)$ and $A_{3} \in \mathcal{L}_{r}(M, \eta)$. Then the formal product $A_{1} A_{2}$ is in $\mathcal{L}_{r}^{*}(M, \eta)$ and,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\left\langle A_{1} A_{2}, A_{3}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}\right| \leqq\left\|A_{1} \eta\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\left\|A_{2} \eta\right\|_{q}^{(\eta)}\left\|A_{3} \eta\right\|_{r}^{(\eta)} \tag{2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The inequality follows from Lemma 2.4 and 2.5.

Lemma 2.9. Let $p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1,1<p<\infty, A=u d_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$, and $B=v \Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{1 / p^{\prime}} \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta) \subset \mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(1)^{1 / p}=\max \left\{\left|\langle B, A\rangle_{(\eta)}\right|, \psi(1) \leqq 1\right\} . \tag{2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

(The maximum is attained.) If $A=u \Lambda_{\phi, \eta} \in \mathcal{L}_{1}(M, \eta)$ and $C=x \in$ $\mathcal{L}_{1}^{*}(M, \eta)$, then

$$
\begin{align*}
& \phi(1)=\max \left\{\left|\langle C, A\rangle_{(y)}\right|,\|x\| \leqq 1\right\}  \tag{2.22}\\
& \|x\|=\sup \left\{\left|\langle C, A\rangle_{(\eta)}\right|, \phi(1) \leqq 1\right\} \tag{2.23}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. Lemma A (iii) implies inequality $\geqq$ in (2.21)-(2.23). The equality in (2.21) is obtained by setting $v=u$ and $\psi=\phi(1)^{-1} \phi$. The equalities in (2.22) and (2.23) follow from $\langle C, A\rangle_{(\eta)}=\phi\left(u^{*} x\right)$.

## § 3. Polar Decomposition in $\mathbb{D}\left(\triangle_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}\right)$

The aim of this section is to show the existence of polar decomposition in $D\left(\Lambda_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}\right)$. We consider the involution operator

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\alpha}^{(\eta)}=J \Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha} \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\alpha$ is real and $J$ is the modular conjugation $J_{\eta, \eta}$. Due to $J \Delta_{\eta} J=\Delta_{\eta}^{-1}$ and $J^{2}=1, D\left(\Lambda_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}\right)$ is invariant under the action of $J_{\alpha}^{(\eta)}$ and $\left(J_{\alpha}^{(\eta)}\right)^{2} \subset 1$. With a fixed element $\zeta$ of $D\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}\right)$, we associate two operators $T_{0}$ and $R_{0}$ defined by,

$$
\begin{align*}
& T_{0} y \eta=\sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) \zeta  \tag{3.2}\\
& R_{0} y \eta=\sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) J_{\alpha}^{(n)} \zeta \tag{3.3}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\sigma_{t}^{\prime \eta}(y)=\Delta_{\eta}^{-i t} y J_{\eta}^{i t}$ for $y \in M^{\prime}$ and $y$ is in the set $M_{0}^{\prime}$ of all entire analytic elements of $M^{\prime}$ with respect to the modular automorphisms $\sigma_{t}^{\prime \eta}$. Note that the domain $D\left(T_{0}\right)=D\left(R_{0}\right)=M_{0}^{\prime} \eta$ is dense in $H$.

Lemma 3. 1. $T_{0}$ and $R_{0}$ are closable operators. Their closures $T$ and $R$ satisfy,

$$
\begin{equation*}
T^{*} \supset R, R^{*} \supset T \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. It is sufficient to prove that for any $y_{1}, y_{2}$ in $M_{0}^{\prime}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(T_{0} y_{1} \eta, y_{2} \eta\right)=\left(y_{1} \eta, R_{0} y_{2} \eta\right) \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

By definitions of $T_{0}$ and $R_{0}$, the two sides of (3.5) are computed as follows;

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(T_{0} y_{1} \eta, y_{2} \eta\right) & =\left(\sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{1}\right) \zeta, y_{2} \eta\right)=\left(\zeta, \sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{1}\right) * y_{2} \eta\right)  \tag{3.6}\\
\left(y_{1} \eta, R_{0} y_{2} \eta\right) & =\left(y_{1} \eta, \sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{2}\right) J \Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha} \zeta\right)  \tag{3.7}\\
& =\left(\sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{2}\right) * y_{1} \eta, J \Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha} \zeta\right) \\
& =\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha} \zeta, J \sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{2}\right) * y_{1} \eta\right) \\
& =\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha} \zeta, \Delta_{\eta}^{-1 / 2)} y_{1}^{*} \sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{2}\right) \eta\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

The proof is completed by the following formula,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\eta}^{-(1 / 2)} y_{1}^{*} \sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{2}\right) \eta=\Delta_{\eta}^{-(1 / 2)+2 \alpha} \sigma_{-2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{1}^{*}\right) y_{2} \eta \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is an analytic continuation of the following identity from real $t$ to pure imaginary $2 i \alpha$.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\eta}^{-(1 / 2)} y_{1}^{*} \sigma_{t}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{2}\right) \eta=\Delta_{\eta}^{-(1 / 2)-i t} \sigma_{-t}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{1}^{*}\right) y_{2} \eta . \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, we consider the polar decomposition of the closed operator $T=u|T|$.

Lemma 3.2. For any $y \in M_{0}^{\prime}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
|T|^{2} \sigma_{-4 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) \supset y|T|^{2} \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. For arbitrary elements $y_{1}, y_{2}$ in $M_{0}^{\prime}$, we have,

$$
\begin{align*}
T_{0} y_{1} y_{2} \eta & =\sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{1} y_{2}\right) \zeta=\sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{1}\right) \sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{2}\right) \zeta  \tag{3.11}\\
& =\sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{1}\right) T_{0} y_{2} \eta .
\end{align*}
$$

This implies $T_{0} y_{1} \supset \sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y_{1}\right) T_{0}$. By taking the closure, we obtain, for any $y$ in $M_{0}^{\prime}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
T y \supset \sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) T \tag{3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Taking the adjoint of this relation and replacing $y^{*}$ by $y$, we obtain,

$$
\begin{equation*}
T^{*} \sigma_{-2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) \supset y T^{*} \tag{3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining these formulas, we obtain the following:

$$
T^{*} T \sigma_{-4 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) \supset T^{*} \sigma_{-2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) T \supset y T^{*} T \quad\left(y \in M_{0}^{\prime}\right) .
$$

## Lemma 3. 3.

(1) Let $p=s(T)$ be the support projection of $T$. Let,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|T_{\mid}\right|^{2}=[\exp \{z(\log \mid T \mathrm{i}) p\}] p . \tag{3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y|T|^{2} \subset|T|^{2} \sigma_{-2 i \alpha z}^{\prime \eta}(y) \tag{3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $y \in M_{0}^{\prime}$ and any complex $z$. For pure imaginary $z$, equality holds for any $y \in M^{\prime}$.
(2) $p$ and the partial isometry $u$ in the polar decomposition of $T$ belong to $M$.

Proof. Because of (3.12), $\xi \in \operatorname{ker} T$ implies $y \xi \in D(T)$ and $T y \xi=0$ for any $y \in M_{0}^{\prime}$. So, $(1-p) H$ is $M_{0}^{\prime}$-invariant. The $\sigma$-weak density of $M_{0}^{\prime}$ in $M^{\prime}$ then implies $(1-p) \in M$ and hence $p \in M$.

To show the formula (3.15), we consider the function,

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(z)=\left(y|T|^{22} \xi_{1}, \xi_{2}\right)-\left(\sigma_{-4 i \alpha z}^{\prime \eta}(y) \xi_{1},|T|^{2 \bar{\xi}} \xi_{2}\right) \tag{3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

of a complex number $z$, where $y \in M^{\prime}$ has a compact support with respect to the spectrum of $\sigma_{t}^{\prime \prime}$ and $\xi^{\prime}$ s have compact supports with respect to the spectrum of $(\log |T|) p$. The following three properties of $f$ implies $f \equiv 0$ due to Carlson's Theorem (Boas [14]).
$(\alpha)$ By the choice of $y, \xi_{1}$, and $\xi_{2}, f(z)$ is exponentially bounded for $\operatorname{Re} z \geqq 0$.
( $\beta$ ) The estimate

$$
\begin{align*}
\mid f( \pm i r) & \leqq\left\||T|^{ \pm 2 i r} \xi_{1}\right\|\left\|y^{*} \xi_{2}\right\|+\left\|\sigma_{ \pm 4 a r}^{\prime \eta}(y) \xi_{1}\right\|\left\||T|^{\mp 2 i r} \xi_{2}\right\|  \tag{3.17}\\
& \leqq 2\|y\|\left\|\xi_{1}\right\|\left\|\xi_{2}\right\|
\end{align*}
$$

implies that

$$
\begin{equation*}
h\left( \pm \frac{\pi}{2}\right) \equiv \varlimsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{r} \log |f( \pm i r)| \leqq 0 \tag{3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

(r) Due to Lemma 3.2,

$$
\begin{equation*}
|T|^{2 n} \sigma_{-4 i n \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) \supset y|T|^{2 n} \tag{3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

and hence $f(n)=0$ for any non negative integer $n$.
Since the set of $\xi$ 's we have used is a core of $|T|^{z}$ (for any $z$ ), we obtain (3.15) from $f=0$.

Lastly, we show $u \in M$. By (3.12) and (3.15), we have $[u, y]|T|$ $=0$ for all $y \in M_{0}^{\prime}$ and hence $[u, y] p=0$. Since $u p=u$ and $[y, p]=0$, we obtain $[u, y]=0$ and hence $u \in M$.

Lemma 3.4. Let $T_{0}$ be defined by (3.2) and $T=\bar{T}_{0}$ for nonzero real $\alpha$. There exists a unique normal semifinite weight $\phi$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
|T|=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha} . \tag{3.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. We consider the following one parameter family of partial isometries;

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{t}=|T|^{(1 / 2 \alpha) i t} \Delta_{\eta}^{-i t} \quad(t \in \boldsymbol{R}) \tag{3.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $u_{t}$ is strongly continuous and belongs to $M$ due to

$$
\begin{align*}
y u_{t} & =y|T|^{(1 / 2 \alpha) i t} \Delta_{\eta}^{-i t}  \tag{3.22}\\
& =|T|^{(1 / 2 \alpha) i t} \sigma_{t}^{\prime \eta}(y) \Delta_{\eta}^{-i t} \\
& =|T|^{(1 / 2 \alpha) i t} \Delta_{\eta}^{-i t} y \\
& =u_{t} y
\end{align*}
$$

for any $y \in M^{\prime}$. Moreover,

$$
\begin{align*}
u_{s+t} & =|T|^{(1 / 2 \alpha) i(s+t)} \Delta_{\eta}^{-i(s+t)}  \tag{3.23}\\
& =|T|^{(1 / 2 \alpha) i s} \Delta_{\eta}^{-i s} \Delta_{\eta}^{i s}|T|^{(1 / 2 \alpha) i t} \Delta_{\eta}^{-i t} \Delta_{\eta}^{-i s} \\
& =u_{s} \sigma_{s}^{\eta}\left(u_{t}\right), \tag{3.24}
\end{align*}
$$

According to the characterization of normal semifinite weight by $M$-valued $\sigma_{t}^{\eta}$ one cocycle (Theorem B. 1 in Appendix B), there exists a unique normal semifinite weight $\phi$ such that,

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{t}=\left(D \phi: D \omega_{\eta}\right)_{t}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{i t} \Delta_{\eta}^{-i t} \tag{3.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

It follows that $|T|^{(1 / 2 \alpha) i t}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{i t}$ and (3.20) follows.

Lemma 3.5. Let $0<\alpha \leqq 1 / 2$. For any normal semifinite weight $\phi, \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha} \eta$ belongs to $V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$, if $\eta$ is in the domain of $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha}$.

Proof. By the property of Radon-Nikodym cocycle,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha} y \supset \sigma_{2 i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha} \tag{3.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $y \in M_{0}^{\prime}$. If $y$ runs over $M_{0}^{\prime}$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\eta}^{-\alpha} y^{*} y \eta=\sigma_{-i \alpha}^{\prime}\left(y^{*} y\right) \eta \tag{3.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

is dense in $V_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-\alpha}$. Since $V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ is the polar of $V_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-\alpha}$, it is enough to show the following:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha} \eta, \sigma_{-i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y^{*} y\right) \eta\right) \geqq 0 \tag{3.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $y \in M_{0}^{\prime} . \quad$ By (3.27),

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha} \eta, \sigma_{-i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}\left(y^{*} y\right) \eta\right) & =\left(\sigma_{i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha} \eta, \sigma_{-i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) \eta\right) \\
& =\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha} \sigma_{-i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) \eta, \sigma_{-i \alpha}^{\prime \eta}(y) \eta\right) \geq 0
\end{aligned}
$$

## Lemma 3. 6.

(1) For any $\zeta \in D\left(\bigsqcup_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}\right)$ with non-zero real $\alpha$, there exists a partial isometry $u$ in $M$ and a normal semifinite weight $\phi$ such that $\eta \in D\left(J_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha}\right), \zeta=u d_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha} \eta$ and $u u^{*}=s^{M}(\zeta)$ (or equivalently $u^{*} u=s(\phi)$ ).
(2) For any $\zeta \in D\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{1 / 2}\right)$, there exists a closed operator $T$ affiliated with $M$ such that $\eta \in D(T)$ and $\zeta=T \eta$.

Proof. By (3.2), $\zeta=T \eta$. By Lemma 3.3, $T=u|T|$ with a partial isometry $u$ in $M$ satisfying $u u^{*}=s\left(T^{*}\right)$ (and $\left.u^{*} \mathrm{u}=\mathrm{s}(T)\right)$. Since $\eta$ is separating, $s^{M}(\zeta)=s\left(T^{*}\right)=u u^{*}$. If $\alpha \neq 0,|T|=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{2 \alpha}$ for a normal semifinite weight $\phi$ by Lemma 3.4 and if $\alpha=0,|T|$ is a non-negative selfadjoint operator affiliated with $M$ by (3.15) for $\alpha=0$.

## § 4. Polar Decomposition in $\boldsymbol{L}_{\boldsymbol{p}}(\boldsymbol{M}, \boldsymbol{\eta}), \mathbf{2} \leqq \boldsymbol{p}<\infty$

In this section, we shall apply the polar decomposition in $D\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{\alpha}\right)$, $(0 \leqq \alpha<1 / 2)$ to elements in $L_{p}(M, \eta), 2 \leqq p<\infty$. The polar decomposition for the case $1 \leqq p<2$ will be given in Section 10.

## Lemma 4.1.

(1) Let $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta), 2 \leqq p<\infty$. Then there exists a unique $\phi$ $\in M_{*}^{+}$and a partial isometry $u \in M$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta . \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

In this case, $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(n)}=\phi(1)^{1 / p}$.
(2) Let $1 \leqq p<2, \eta \in D\left(\Lambda_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}\right)$ for a normal semifinite weight $\phi$ and $\zeta=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 /, \eta} \eta$ where $u$ is a partial isometry in $M$ such that $u^{*} u=s(\phi)$. Then $\phi$ is bounded and $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\pi)}=\phi(1)^{1 / p}$.

Proof. (1) Taking $\xi=\eta$ in the definition (1.3), any $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is in $D\left(\Lambda_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\right)$ and hence $\zeta$ is of the form $\zeta=u \Lambda_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p \eta}$ by Lemma 3.6. By definition (1.3), $\zeta \in D\left(\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\right)$ for any $\eta_{1} \in H$. For any $\eta_{1} \in H$ satisfying $s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) \leqq s\left(\phi_{u}\right)$ where $\phi_{u}(x)=\phi\left(u^{*} x u\right)$, we prove the following consequence in Lemma 4.2 below:

$$
\begin{equation*}
u^{*} \eta_{1} \in D\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1, p}\right), \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{(1, p)} \eta\right\|=\left\|\Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} u^{*} \eta_{1}\right\| . \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore for any such $\eta_{1}$ of unit length,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} u^{*} \eta_{1}\right\| \leqq\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(n)}<\infty . \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\phi$ and hence $\phi_{u}$ are normal, there exists an increasing net of $\widetilde{\phi}_{\alpha} \in M_{*}^{+}$with $\sup \widetilde{\phi}_{\alpha}=\phi_{u} . \quad$ By Lemma C. 3 ,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Delta_{\phi_{a}, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \eta_{1}\right\| \leqq\left\|\Delta_{\phi_{u}, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \eta_{1}\right\|=\left\|\Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} u^{*} \eta_{1}\right\| . \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

(Last equality is due to Theorem C.1.) If we take $\eta_{1}=\xi_{\alpha} /\left\|\xi_{\alpha}\right\|$ for the vector representative $\xi_{\alpha} \in \mathscr{L}{ }_{\eta}$ 號 $\widetilde{\phi}_{\alpha}$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Delta_{\tilde{\phi}_{\alpha}, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \eta_{1}\right\|=\widetilde{\phi}_{\alpha}(1)^{1 / p}\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \eta_{1}\right\|=\widetilde{\phi}_{\alpha}(1)^{1 / p} \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combining (4.6), (4.5) and (4.4), we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(1)^{1 / p}=\phi_{u}(1)^{1 / p}=\sup _{\alpha} \widetilde{\phi}_{\alpha}(1)^{1 / p} \leqq\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(n)}<\infty \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

This proves the existence of the decomposition (4.1) with $\phi \in M_{\ddagger}^{+}$. Then, owing to Lemma C. $2,\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta\right\|=\left\|\Delta_{\phi_{u}, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \eta_{1}\right\|$. Hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\sup _{\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|=1}\left\|\Delta_{\phi_{u}, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \eta_{1}\right\| \leqq \phi_{u}(1)^{1 / p}=\phi(1)^{1 / p} \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

due to $\left\|\Delta_{\phi_{u}, \eta_{1}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{1}\right\|=\phi_{u}(1)^{1 / 2}$ and the three line theorem. This shows $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(n)}$ $=\phi(1)^{1 / p}$ due to (4.7).

To prove the uniqueness of the decomposition, assume $v \Delta_{\psi,{ }_{\eta}}^{1 / p} \eta=\zeta$ with a partial isometry $v \in M$ and $\psi \in M_{*}^{+}$satisfying $v^{*} v=s(\psi)$. Let $T=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}$. For $y \in M_{0}^{\prime}$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
T y \eta=\sigma_{i(1 / p)}^{\prime \eta}(y) \zeta=\sigma_{i(1 / p)}^{\prime \eta}(y) v \Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta=v \Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{1 / p} y \eta . \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

By definition, $M_{0}^{\prime} \eta$ is a core of $T$. If $M_{0}^{\prime} \eta$ is also a core of $\Delta_{\varphi, \eta}^{1 / p}$, then we obtain $T=v \Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{1 / p}$ and by uniqueness of polar decomposition, we obtain $u=v$ and $\phi=\psi$. Hence the decomposition is unique.

To see that $M_{0}^{\prime} \eta$ is the core of $\Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{\alpha}$ for $0<\alpha \leqq 1 / 2$, it is enough to prove it for $\alpha=1 / 2$ because of the inequality $\left\|A^{\nu} \zeta\right\| \leqq\|A \zeta\|^{\nu}\|\zeta\|^{1-\nu}$ for any $A \geqq 0$ and $0 \leqq \nu \leqq 1$. For $x \in M_{0}, x \eta=J A_{\eta}^{1 / 2} x^{*} \eta=y \eta$ where $y=$ $J \sigma_{-(i / 2)}^{\eta}\left(x^{*}\right) J \in M_{0}^{\prime}$. Therefore $M_{0}^{\prime} \eta \supset \mathrm{M}_{0} \eta$. (Actually equality holds.) By definition, $M \eta$ is a core of $\Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{1 / 2}$. Since $\left\|\Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{1 / 2} x \eta\right\|=\|\mathrm{x} * \xi(\psi)\|$ and $M_{0}$ is $*$-strongly dense in $M, M_{0} \eta$ is also a core of $\Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{1 / 2}$. This proves that $M_{0}^{\prime} \eta$ is the core of $\Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{1 / 2}$ and hence that of $\Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{\alpha}$ for $0<\alpha \leqq 1 / 2$.

For the assertion (2), the boundedness of $\phi$ follows from Lemma C.4. To prove the equality, we start from $\xi \in \mathscr{Q} \mathcal{D}_{\eta}$ such that $\phi=\omega_{\xi}$. Let $\eta_{1}=j(u) u \xi /\|\xi\|$ where $j(u)=J u J$. By Lemma C. 2,

$$
\begin{align*}
J_{\eta_{1}, \eta} \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} u \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta & =u^{*} \Delta_{j(u) u \xi_{5} \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \eta_{1}  \tag{4.10}\\
& =\|\xi\|^{2 / p} u^{*} \Delta_{\eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \eta_{1}=\|\xi\|^{2 / p} u^{*} \eta_{1},
\end{align*}
$$

and hence,

$$
\begin{align*}
\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)} & =\inf \left\{\left\|\Delta_{\tilde{\eta}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta\right\|:\|\tilde{\eta}\|=1, s^{M}(\tilde{\eta}) \geqq s^{M}(\zeta)\right\}  \tag{4.11}\\
& \leqq\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta\right\| \\
& =\|\xi\|^{2 / p}\left\|u^{*} \eta_{1}\right\|=\phi(1)^{1 / p}
\end{align*}
$$

The inequality $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(n)} \geqq \phi(1)^{1 / p}$ now follows from

$$
\begin{align*}
\phi(1)^{1 / p} & =\|j(u) u \xi\|^{2 / p}  \tag{4.12}\\
& \leqq\left\|\Delta_{j(u) u \xi_{1} \eta_{1}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{1}\right\|
\end{align*}
$$

for any $\eta_{1} \in H$ such that $s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) \geqq s^{M}\left(u \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta\right)=s^{M}(u j(u) \xi),\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|=1$ and $\eta_{1} \in D\left(\Delta_{j}^{1 / p}(u) u \varepsilon_{,} \eta_{1}\right)$. The inequality in (4.12) follows from $\left\|\Delta_{j(u) u s, \eta_{1}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{1}\right\|$ $=\left\|s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) j(u) u \xi\right\|=\|j(u) u \xi\|$ and the Hölder inequality $\|A \eta\|^{\alpha} \leqq\left\|A^{\alpha} \eta_{1}\right\|$ for $A \geqq 0, \alpha \geqq 1$ and $\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|=1$. Hence we have $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(n)}=\phi(1)^{1 / p}$.

Lemma 4.2. Let $p \geqq 2$, $\phi$ be a normal semifinite weight on $M$, $u$ be a partial isometry in $M$ satisfying $u^{*} u=s(\phi), \eta_{1} \in \mathcal{L}_{\eta}$ (the natural positive cone) and $s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) \leqq u u^{*}$. Assume that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}\right) \tag{4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $\eta_{1}^{\prime} \in H$ and, if $\left\|\eta_{1}^{\prime}\right\|=1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}^{\prime}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta\right\| \leqq A \tag{4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

for a constant $A$ independent of $\eta_{1}^{\prime}$. Then (4.2) and (4.3) holds.

Proof. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
v(t)=d_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{-i t} d_{\phi_{\mu}, \eta}^{i t} \in M . \tag{4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $v(t) v(t)^{*}=s^{H}\left(\eta_{1}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
v(t) * \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{z} v(t)=\Delta_{\eta_{1}(t), \eta}^{z}(z \in C) \tag{4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $\eta_{1}(t)=v(t){ }^{*} j(v(t) *) \eta_{1}$ by Theorem C. 1 ( $\beta 4$ ). Hence the following expression makes sense by the assumtion of Lemma:

$$
\begin{align*}
& v(t) * \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} v(t) u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta  \tag{4.17}\\
& \quad=v(t) * \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)-i t} \Delta_{\phi u, \eta}^{i t} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta \\
& \quad=v(t) * \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)-i t} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{(1 / p)+i t} \eta .
\end{align*}
$$

Since $\Delta_{\eta_{1}(t), \eta}^{z}=\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|^{2 z} \Delta_{\eta_{1}^{\prime}, \eta}^{z}$ for $\eta_{1}^{\prime}=\eta_{1}(t) /\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|$ and $\left\|\eta_{1}^{\prime}\right\|=1$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-z} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{z} \eta\right\| \leqq\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|^{1-(2 / p)} A \tag{4.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $\approx=(1 / p)+i t$ and any $t \in \boldsymbol{R}$. For any $\xi \in H$ with a compact support relative to the spectrum of $\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}$, we set

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{\xi}(z)=\left(u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{z} \eta, \Delta_{\eta, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-\bar{z}} \xi\right) . \tag{4.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $f(z)$ is holomorphic in the strip region $0<\operatorname{Re} z<1 / p$, continuous on its closure and satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|f_{\xi}(z)\right| \leqq\left\{\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|^{1-(z / p)} A\right\}^{p \operatorname{Re} z}\|\xi\|\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|^{1-p \operatorname{Re} z} \tag{4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

by (4. 18), $\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-i t} u d_{\phi, \eta}^{i t} \eta\right\|=\left\|w_{t}^{*} u^{*} \eta_{1}\right\| \leqq\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|$ for $w_{t}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{i t} d_{\eta}^{-i t} \in M$, and three line theorem. It follows that the mapping $\xi \mapsto f_{\xi}(z)$ is norm continuous. Hence $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{z} \eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-z}\right), f_{\xi}(z)=\left(\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-z} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{z} \eta, \xi\right)$ for any $\approx$ satisfying $0 \leqq \operatorname{Re} z \leqq 1 / p$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-z} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{z} \eta\right\| \leqq A^{p \operatorname{Re} z} \quad \text { for } \quad\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|=1 \tag{4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence $\approx \mapsto \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-z} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{z} \eta$ is weakly holomorphic for $0<\operatorname{Re} \approx<1 / p$ and weakly continuous on the closure.

For any $\xi \in H$ which has a compact support with respect to the spectrum of $\Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}$, we put

$$
\begin{align*}
& g_{\xi}^{(1)}(z)=\left(J_{\eta_{1}, \eta} \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-\bar{z}} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{\overline{2}} \eta, \xi\right),  \tag{4.22}\\
& g_{\xi}^{(2)}(z)=\left(u * \eta_{1}, \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{\bar{z}} \xi\right) . \tag{4.23}
\end{align*}
$$

Then $g_{\xi}^{(1)}(z)$ and $g_{\xi}^{(2)}(z)$ are holomorphic for $0<\operatorname{Re} z<1 / p$ and continuous on the closure. Furthermore

$$
\begin{align*}
g_{\xi}^{(1)}(i t) & =\left(J_{\eta_{1}, \eta} \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{-i t} \eta, \xi\right)  \tag{4.24}\\
& =\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{i t} u^{*} \eta_{1}, \xi\right) \\
& =g_{\xi}^{(2)}(i t)
\end{align*}
$$

due to Lemma C.2. It follows $g_{\xi}^{(1)}(1 / p)=g_{\xi}^{(2)}(1 / p)$. Hence (4.2) holds and

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\eta_{1}, \eta} \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} u \Delta_{\phi,{ }_{2}}^{1 / p} \eta=\Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} u^{*} \eta_{1} . \tag{4.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

This implies (4.3) due to $J_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{*} J_{\eta_{1}, \eta}=s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right)=s\left(\|_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\right)$.

## Lemma 4. 3.

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)=\left\{\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta: \phi \in M_{*}^{+}\right\}, \quad 2 \leqq p<\infty . \tag{4.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Let $\zeta=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta, \phi \in M_{*}^{+}$. By Lemma 3.5, $\zeta \in V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)}$. Conversely, let $\zeta \in L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)$ and $\zeta=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta$ be the polar decomposition. Then for $y \in M_{0}^{\prime}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} y \eta, y \eta\right) & =\left(\sigma_{i(1 / p)}^{\prime \eta}(y) \zeta, y \eta\right)  \tag{4.27}\\
& =\left(\zeta, \sigma_{-i(1 / p)}^{\prime \eta}\left(y^{*}\right) y \eta\right) \geqq 0
\end{align*}
$$

due to

$$
\begin{align*}
\sigma_{-i(1 / p)}^{\prime \eta}\left(y^{*}\right) y \eta & =\Delta_{\eta}^{-1 /(2 p)} \sigma_{i /(2 p)}^{\prime}(y) * \sigma_{i /(2 p)}^{\prime \eta}(y) \eta  \tag{4.28}\\
& \in V_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 /(2 p))} .
\end{align*}
$$

By the proof of Lemma 4.1, $M_{0}^{\prime} \eta$ is a core of $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}$. Hence $u d_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \geqq 0$.
Since $\zeta$ is assumed to be in $V_{\eta}^{\alpha}, \alpha=1 /(2 p)$, we have $J_{\alpha}^{(n)} \zeta=\zeta$ by Theorem 3 of [2] where $J_{\alpha}^{(i)}$ is defined by (3.1). On the other hand, due to Lemma C. 2 and Theorem C. 1 ( $\beta 4$ ), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\alpha}^{(\eta)} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta=u^{*} \Delta_{\phi, \eta, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta . \tag{4.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence the uniqueness in Lemma 4.1 (1) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}=u^{*} \Delta_{\phi u, \eta}^{1 / p}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} u^{*} . \tag{4.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}$ is self-adjoint and positive as was shown above. Therefore $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}=\Delta_{\phi,{ }_{\eta}^{1}}^{1 / p}$ by the uniqueness of polar decomposition.

Lemma 4. 4. For $x \in M$ and $2 \leqq p<\infty$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|x\|\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(m)} \geqq\|x \zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)} \tag{4.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By Lemma 4.1 (1), $\zeta=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta$ with $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\phi(1)^{1 / p}$. Hence
(1.25) implies (4.31) in view of the definition (1.3).

## $\S$ 5. Special Cases $p=1, \infty$

In this section, we shall give canonical isomorphisms of $L_{\infty}(M, \eta)$ with $M$ and of $L_{1}(M, \eta)$ with $M_{*}$.

Lemma 5.1. Let $\zeta \in L_{\infty}(M, \eta)$. Then there exists a unique $x \in M$ satisfying $\zeta=x \eta$ and $\|\zeta\|_{\infty}^{(\eta)}=\|x\|$. Under the correspondence $x \in M \mapsto x \eta \in L_{\infty}(M, \eta), L_{\infty}(M, \eta)$ is isomorphic to $M$ as a Banach space.

Proof. By (1.3), $\zeta \in D\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{1 / 2}\right)$. By Lemma 3.6 (2), there exists a closed operator $T$ affiliated with $M$, satisfying the relation $\zeta=T \eta$. For any unit vector $\eta_{1} \in H$ and any $y \in M^{\prime}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}}^{1 / 2} \zeta, y \eta\right) & =\left(S_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{*} y \eta, \zeta\right)  \tag{5.1}\\
& =\left(y^{*} \eta_{1}, \zeta\right) \\
& =\left(\eta_{1}, y \zeta\right) \\
& =\left(\eta_{1}, T y \eta\right)
\end{align*}
$$

where $S_{\eta_{1}, \eta}$ is given by (1.2), which implies $S_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{*} y \eta=y^{*} \eta_{1}$ for $y \in M^{\prime}$. Since $M^{\prime} \eta$ is a core of $T$, we obtain $\eta_{1} \in D\left(T^{*}\right), J_{\eta_{1}, \eta} \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{1 / 2} \zeta=T^{*} \eta_{1}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\zeta\|_{\infty}^{(\eta)}=\sup _{\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|=1}\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{1 / 2} \zeta\right\|=\sup _{\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|=1}\left\|T^{*} \eta_{1}\right\|=\left\|T^{*}\right\| . \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

It follows that $T^{*}$ and hence $T$ are in $M$. This proves $\zeta=x \eta, x=T$ $\in M$, and $\|x\|=\|\zeta\|_{\infty}^{(\eta)}$. Since $\eta$ is separating, $x \in M$ satisfying $\zeta=x \eta$ is unique.

Conversely, if $\zeta=x \eta$ with $x \in M$, then $\zeta \in D\left(\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2}\right)$ for any $\xi \in H$ and,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\|\leqslant\|=1}\left\|D_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2 \zeta}\right\|=\sup _{\|\leqslant\|=1}\left\|x^{* \xi}\right\|=\left\|x^{*}\right\|=\|x\| \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 5.2. $L_{\infty}^{+}(M, \eta)=M_{+} \eta$.

Proof. $\quad M_{+} \eta \subset V_{\eta}^{0}$. Hence $M_{+} \eta \subset L_{\infty}^{+}(M, \eta)$. Let $\zeta \in L_{\infty}^{+}(M, \eta)$. Ву

Lemma 5.1, there exists unique $x \in M$ such that $\zeta=x \eta$ and ( $x y \eta, y \eta$ ) $=\left(\zeta, y^{*} y \eta\right) \geqq 0$ for any $y \in M_{0}^{\prime}$ due to $y^{*} y \eta \in V_{\eta}^{1 / 2}$. Hence $x \geqq 0$ and $L_{\infty}^{+}(M, \eta) \subset M_{\perp} \eta$.

Lemma 5.3. Let $\zeta \in H$ and $w_{\zeta, \eta}(x) \equiv\left(\zeta, x^{*} \eta\right)$ for $x \in M$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\zeta\|_{1}^{(n)}=\left\|w w_{, \eta}\right\| . \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Let $w_{\zeta, \eta}(x)=\phi(x u)$ with a partial isometry $u$ in $M$ and $\phi \in M_{*}^{+}$satisfying $u^{*} u=s(\phi)$ be the known polar decomposition of $w_{\zeta, \eta}$ $\in M_{*}$. (Theorem 1.14.4 of [19].) Let $\xi \in \mathscr{Q}$ 白 be a vector representative for $\phi$.

Since $1-u u^{*}$ is the largest projection $p \in M$ satisfying $w_{\zeta, \eta}(x p)=0$ for all $x \in M$, it is $1-s^{M}(\zeta)$ and hence $s^{M}(\zeta)=u u^{*}$. Therefore

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(u^{*} \zeta, u^{*} x^{*} \eta\right) & =\left(\zeta, x^{*} \eta\right)=(x u \xi, \xi)  \tag{5.5}\\
& =\left(J_{\xi, \eta} \eta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2} u^{*} x^{*} \eta, J_{\xi, \eta} d_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta\right) \\
& =\left(\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta, \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2} u^{*} x^{*} \eta\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

If $\Psi$ is in $\left(1-u^{*} u\right) H$, then it is obviously orthogonal to $u^{*} \zeta$. It is also in ker $\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2}$ because $s^{n I}(\xi)=s(\phi)=u^{*} u$. Hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(u^{*} \zeta, u^{*} u x_{1} \eta+\Psi\right)=\left(\Delta_{\xi}^{1 / 2} \eta, \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2}\left(u^{*} u x_{1} \eta+\Psi\right)\right) \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $x_{1} \in M$. Since $u^{*} u M \eta+\left(1-u^{*} u\right) H \supset M \eta$ is a core for $\Delta_{E, \eta}^{1 / 2}$, (5.6) implies $\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
u^{*} \zeta=\Delta_{e, \eta} \eta \tag{5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore $\eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\epsilon, \eta}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta=u d_{\varepsilon, \eta} \eta \tag{5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $u^{*} u=s^{n}(\xi)$. By Lemma 4.1 (2), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\zeta\|_{1}^{(i)}=\|\xi\|^{2}=\|\phi\|=\left\|w_{\zeta, \eta}\right\| . \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 5.4. $L_{1}(M, \eta)$ and $M_{*}$ are isomorphic as Banach spaces through the unique continuous extension of the mapping

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta \in H \mapsto w_{\xi, \eta} \in M_{*} . \tag{5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By Lemma 5.3, it remains to prove that the set of $w_{5, \eta}$ is norm dense in $M_{*}$. Since $M^{\prime} \eta$ is dense in $H, w_{u y^{*} y_{n}, \eta}=w_{u y_{\eta}, y_{\eta}}$ with $y \in M^{\prime}$ and a partial isometry $u \in M$ is norm dense in $M_{*}$. (Note that $w_{y_{v}, y_{p}}$ is norm dense in $\left.M_{*}^{+}.\right)$.

Lemma 5.5. Through the identification of $L_{1}(M, \eta)$ with $M_{*}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{1}^{\prime}(M, \eta)=M_{*}^{\prime}, \quad L_{1}^{\prime}(M, \eta) \cap H=V_{\eta}^{1 / 2} . \tag{5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. If $\zeta \in V_{\eta}^{1 / 2}\left(=\mathscr{P}_{\eta}^{b}\right)$, then $\left(\zeta, x^{*} \eta\right) \geqq 0$ for $x \in M^{+}$by the duality of $V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ and $V_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-\alpha}$. Hence $V_{\eta}^{1 / 2} \subset M_{*}^{+}$. Since the relation $\left\langle\zeta, x^{*} \eta\right\rangle_{(\eta)} \geqq 0$ for $x \in M^{+}$is stable under limit, we have $L_{1}^{+}(M, \eta)$ (as the closure of $\left.V_{\eta}^{1 / 2}\right)$ in $M_{*}^{+}$. On the other hand, $w_{y^{+} y_{\eta, \eta}}=w_{y_{\eta}}$ with $y \in M^{\prime}$ is norm dense in $M_{*}^{+}$. Hence we have $L_{1}^{+}(M, \eta)=M_{*}^{+}$. By the proof of Lemma 5.3, $w_{\zeta, \eta} \in M_{*}^{+}$implies $\zeta=\Delta_{\xi, \eta} \eta \in V_{\eta}^{1 / 2}$ due to Lemma 3.5.

Remark 5.6. Any $\zeta \in H$ has a polar decomposition $\zeta=u|\zeta|$ with $|\zeta| \in V_{\eta}^{1 / 2}=\mathcal{P}_{\eta}^{\bullet}$ satisfying $u^{*} u=s^{M}(|\zeta|)$. By applying $J$, this is the same as the existence of a vector representative in $\mathscr{P}_{\eta}^{\#}$ for any state.

Remark 5.7. We have $\mathcal{L}_{1}(M, \eta)=L_{1}(M, \eta)$ via Lemma 5.4, the identification of $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta} \in \mathcal{L}_{1}(M, \eta)$ with $u \phi \in M_{*}$ due to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}, x^{*}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta, \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} u^{*} x^{*} \eta\right)=\phi(x u)=u \phi(x) \tag{5.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $x \in M$ and polar decomposition $\psi=u \phi$ for any $\psi \in M_{*}$. (See Theorem 1.14. 4 of [19].) Then $\left\|u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}\right\|_{1}^{(\pi)}=\phi(1)$. If $\phi(x u)=\left(\Psi, x^{*} \eta\right)$ for some $\Psi \in H$, then the proof of Lemma 5.3 implies $\eta \in D\left(\Lambda_{\phi, \eta}\right)$ and $\Psi$ $=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta} \eta$.

## § 6. Completeness of $\mathbb{L}_{\boldsymbol{p}}(\boldsymbol{M}, \boldsymbol{\eta}), \mathbf{2} \leqq \boldsymbol{p}<\infty$

## Lemma 6. 1.

(1) For $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(j)}\|\eta\|^{1-(2 / p)} \geqq\|\zeta\| . \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

(2) If $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$, and $\zeta \in H$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\sqrt{(1)}} \leqq\|\zeta\|\|\eta\|^{(2 /(p)-1} \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

(3) For $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty,\|\cdot\|_{p}^{(7)}$ is a norm and $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is complete.

Proof. (1) The case $p=\infty$ follows from $\|x \eta\| \leqq\|x\|\|\eta\|$ and Lemma 5.1. Let $2 \leqq p<\infty$ and $\zeta=u \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta$ be the polar decomposition of $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ given by Lemma 4.1 (1). Then $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\|\xi\|^{\|^{2 / p}}$ and, due to $\left\|\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta\right\|=\|\xi\|$, we obtain $\|\zeta\|=\left\|\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta\right\| \leqq\|\xi\|^{2 / p}\|\eta\|^{1-(2 / p)}$ by the Hölder inequality.
(2) We compute as follows: let $\zeta=u|\zeta|, u \in M^{\text {p.i. }},|\zeta| \in \mathscr{P}^{\boxminus}$.

$$
\begin{align*}
\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)} & =\inf \left\{\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta\right\|:\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|=1, s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) \geqq s^{M}(\zeta)\right\}  \tag{6.3}\\
& \leqq\left\|\Delta_{\zeta / / / 1 /\| \|, \eta}^{(1 / 2)}(1 / p) \zeta\right\| \\
& \leqq\|\zeta\|^{(2 / p)-1}\left\|\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta\right\| .
\end{align*}
$$

Due to the Hölder inequality,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Delta_{\zeta}^{-\alpha} \eta \eta\right\| \leqq \zeta\left\|^{1-2 \alpha}\right\| \Delta_{\zeta, \eta}^{-1 / 2} \zeta \|^{2 \alpha} \tag{6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $0 \leqq \alpha=(1 / p)-(1 / 2) \leqq 1 / 2$ and $\Delta_{\zeta}^{-1 / 2} \zeta=s^{M}(\zeta) u \eta$. Therefore,

$$
\begin{align*}
\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)} & \leqq(1 /\|\zeta\|)^{1-(2 / p)}\|\zeta\|^{-(2 / p)}\left\|s^{M}(\zeta) u \eta\right\|^{(2 / p)-1}  \tag{6.5}\\
& \leqq\|\zeta\|\|\eta\|^{(2 / p)-1}
\end{align*}
$$

(3) Definition (1.4) and positive definiteness of $\Delta_{\xi, \eta}$ for separating $\xi$ imply that $\|\cdot\|_{p}^{(m)}$ is a norm. We now prove the completeness. Let $\zeta_{n}$ be a Cauchy sequence in $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ with respect to $\|\cdot\|_{p}^{(n)}$-norm. Then,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|=1}\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\left(\zeta_{n}-\zeta_{m}\right)\right\| \rightarrow 0 \quad \text { as } \quad n, m \rightarrow \infty \tag{6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and hence, for each $\eta_{1}$, there exists the limit

$$
\begin{equation*}
f\left(\eta_{1}\right)=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta_{n}, \tag{6.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

and satisfies,

$$
\sup _{\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|=1}\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta_{n}-f\left(\eta_{1}\right)\right\| \rightarrow 0 \quad \text { as } \quad n \rightarrow \infty
$$

On the other hand, (6.1) and (6.6) imply that $\zeta_{n}$ is a Cauchy sequence in $H$. Let $\zeta=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \zeta_{n}$. It then follows from (6.7) and the closedness of $\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}$ that $\zeta \in D\left(\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\right)$ and $f\left(\eta_{1}\right)=\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta$. Furthermore (6.8) implies,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|=1}\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta\right\|=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left\|\zeta_{n}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}<\infty \tag{6.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left\|\zeta-\zeta_{n}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=0$ by (6.8).

Remark 6.2. Since $\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} x \eta\right\| \leqq\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{1 / 2} x \eta\right\|^{1-(2 / p)}\|x \eta\|^{2 / p}=$ $\left\|x^{*} \eta_{1}\right\|^{1-(2 / p)}\|x \eta\|^{2 / p} \leqq\|x\|\|\eta\|^{2 / p}$ for any $\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|=1$, we have $M \eta \subset L_{p}(M, \eta)$, $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$, and hence $L_{p}(M, \eta), 2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$ is dense in $H$ with respect to the topology of $H$.

Lemma 6. 3. For $x \in M$ and $1 \leqq p \leqq \infty$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|x \eta\|_{p}^{(n)} \leqq\|x\|\|\eta\|^{2 / p} \tag{6.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Since $\eta=\Delta_{\eta, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta,\|\eta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\|\eta\|^{2 / p}$ by Lemma 4.1. Hence (6.10) follows from Lemma 4.4 for $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$ and from (6.2) together with $\|x \eta\| \leqq\|x\|\|\eta\|$ for $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$.

Lemma 6.4. Any $\zeta \in H$ may be identified with an element of $L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}(2 \leqq p \leqq \infty)$ through the inner product $\left(\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right)$ in $H$ for $\zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p}(M, \eta)(\subset H)$ and, for $p=\infty, \zeta \in L_{\infty}(M, \eta)_{*}=L_{1}(M, \eta)$.

Proof. By Lemma 6.1 (1), $\mid\left(\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right)!\leqq\|\zeta\|\left\|\zeta^{\prime}\right\| \leqq c\left\|\zeta^{\prime}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}$ and hence $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$. The case $p=\infty$ has already been proved in Lemmas 5.3 and 5.4.

## $\S 7$ A Sesquilinear Form between $\mathbb{L}_{p}$ and $\mathbb{L}_{p^{\prime}}$

In this section, we shall introduce the sesquilinear form between $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ for $p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1$ and imbed $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$, $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ and $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$ into the dual space $L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ of $L_{p}(M, \eta)$.

## Lemma 7.1.

(1) For $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$ and for any $\zeta \in H,\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(n)}<\infty$
(2) If $p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1, \quad \zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta) \cap H$ and $\zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p}(M, \eta) \cap H$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\left(\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right)\right| \leqq\|\zeta\|_{\mathcal{P}}^{\left.()^{( }\right)}\left\|\zeta^{\prime}\right\|_{\mathcal{P}^{\prime}}^{(j)} . \tag{7.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. (1) There exists a partial isometry $u$ in $M$ and $|\zeta| \in \mathscr{P} \mathscr{D}_{\eta}$, such that $\zeta=u|\zeta|$ and $u^{*} u=s^{M}(|\zeta|)$ by eq. (7.3) of [2]. Then $|\zeta|=J|\zeta|$ $=\Delta_{|\zeta|, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta$ and $\Delta_{\zeta, \eta}^{z}=u \Delta_{|\zeta|, \eta}^{z} u^{*}$. Hence $\Delta_{\bar{\zeta}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)} \zeta=u \eta$, which implies $\zeta \in D\left(\Delta_{\zeta, \eta}^{\alpha}\right)$ for any $-(1 / 2) \leqq \alpha \leqq 0$ and in particular for $\alpha=(1 / 2)-(1 / p)$ if $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$. (2) We may assume $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$. If $\zeta \in H$ and $\varepsilon>0$, there exists $\eta_{1}$ with $\left\|\eta_{1}\right\|=1$ such that $\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta\right\| \leqq\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}+\varepsilon$. Since $\left(2^{-1}-p^{-1}\right)+\left(2^{-1}-\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}\right)$ $=0$, we obtain for any $\zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|\left(\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right)\right| & =\left|\left(\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta, \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)}-\left(1 / p^{\prime}\right) \zeta^{\prime}\right)\right|  \tag{7.2}\\
& \leqq\left(\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(n)}+\varepsilon\right)\left\|\zeta^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{\prime}}^{(n)} .
\end{align*}
$$

Since $\varepsilon$ is arbitrary, $\left|\left(\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right)\right| \leqq\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\bar{y})}\left\|\zeta^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{\prime}}^{\left.()^{\prime}\right)}$.

Lemma 7. 2. For $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$ and $\zeta=u u_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta\left(\eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / p}\right)\right)$ with a partial isometry $u \in M$ satisfying $u^{*} u=s^{M}(\xi)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\pi)}=\sup \left\{\left|\left(\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right)\right|: \zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta),\left\|\zeta^{\prime}\right\|_{p}^{(n)} \leqq 1, p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1\right\} . \tag{7.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. By Lemma 4.1 (2), $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\|\xi\|^{2 / p}$. The equality is attained in (7.1) by the homogeneity of relative modular operator if we set $\zeta^{\prime}$ $=u \Delta_{\tilde{\xi}, \eta}^{1 / p^{\prime}} \eta$ where $\tilde{\xi}=\xi /\|\xi\|$ and $p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1$. Hence (7.3) holds.

Lemma 7.3. If $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$ and $p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1$, then any element in $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}^{*}(M, \eta)$ can be viewed as an element of $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ in the sense that $\eta \in D(A)$ and $A \eta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for any

$$
\begin{equation*}
A=x_{0} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \eta}^{z_{1}} x_{1} \cdots \Delta_{\phi_{n, \eta}}^{z_{n}} \eta x_{n} \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}^{*}(M, \eta) \quad\left(z \in I_{1 / p}^{(n)}\right), \tag{7.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

(see Notation 2.3 (2) for definition of $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}^{*}(M, \eta)$ and $I_{1 / p}^{(n)}$ ), and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|A \eta\|_{p}^{(n)} \leqq\left(\prod_{l=0}^{n}\left\|x_{l}\right\|\right)\left(\prod_{l=1}^{n} \phi_{l}(1)^{\left.\operatorname{Re} z_{l}\right)}\right) \omega_{\eta}(1)^{(1 / p)-\sum_{l=1}^{n} \operatorname{Re} z_{l}} \tag{7.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $1 \leqq p \leqq 2, p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1$ and $A$ is given by (7.4), then $A$ can be viewed as an element of $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$ through the inner product $\langle A$, $B\rangle_{(\eta)}$ for $B \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)=L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ and (7.5) holds.

Proof. First let $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$. By Lemma A, $\eta$ is in the domain of $A$ and $A \eta$ is in the domain of $\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}$ for any $\xi \in H$. Furthermore the estimate (1.25) of Lemma A (iii) implies that $A \eta$ is in $L_{p}(M, \eta)$
and (7.5) holds. Next consider the case $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$. By Remark 2.7 and Lemma 4.1 (1), we may view $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}^{*}(M, \eta)$ as an element of $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$ and (7.5) follows from (1.25).

Lemma 7.4. For $2 \leqq p<\infty, \quad\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1-p^{-1}$ and $A=u d_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / p^{\prime}} \in$ $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ with $u^{*} u=s^{M}(\xi)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\xi\|^{2 / p^{\prime}}=\max \left\{\left|\langle B, A\rangle_{(\eta)}\right|: B \in \mathcal{S}_{p}(M, \eta),\|B \eta\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=1\right\} . \tag{7.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

(The maximum is attained.)

Proof. By Lemmas 2.9 and 4.1 (1).

Remark 7.5. This Lemma shows that the norm $\|A\|_{p^{\prime}}^{\left(n^{+}\right)}$of $A$ as elements in the dual space $L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ is $\|\xi\|^{2 / p^{\prime}}$ for $2 \leqq p<\infty$. In view of Lemmas 2.9 and 4.4 (1), there exists $A \in \mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$ for any given $B \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta) \quad(2 \leqq p \leqq \infty)$ such that $\langle B, A\rangle_{(\eta)}=\|B\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\|A\|_{p^{\prime}}^{\left(\eta^{\prime}\right)}$.

Notation 7.6. Let $\mathcal{L}_{p, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$ be the set of all formal expression (2.9) satisfying $\sum_{j=1}^{n} \operatorname{Re} z_{j}=1-(1 / p)$ in addition to all conditions stated below (2.9). The adjoint $B^{*} \in \mathcal{L}_{p, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$ for $B$ in $\mathcal{L}_{p, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$ given by (2.9) is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
B^{*}=x_{n}^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{n}, \eta}^{\bar{z}_{n}^{n}} \cdots x_{1}^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \eta}^{\bar{L}_{1}} x_{0}^{*} . \tag{7.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

The product $B C \in \mathcal{L}_{r, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$ of $B \in \mathcal{L}_{p, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$ and $C \in \mathcal{L}_{q, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$ is defined if $r^{-1}=p^{-1}+q^{-1}-1$ and $1 \leqq r, p, q \leqq \infty$ as the expression obtained by writing expressions for $B$ and $C$ together in that order and combine the last $x$ in $B$ and the top $x$ in $C$ according to the product operation in $M$.

## Lemma 7. 7.

(1) Any element $B \in \mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$ is equivalent to an element in $\mathcal{L}_{p, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$.
(2) If $B_{i} \in \mathcal{L}_{p, 0}^{*}(M, \eta) \quad i=1, \cdots, n$ and $\sum_{i=1}^{n} B_{i}=0$ either as elements in $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ for $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$ and $\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1-p^{-1}$ (Lemma 7.3) or as elements in $L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ for $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$ (Remark 2.7), then $\sum_{i=1}^{n} B_{i}^{*}=0$ in
the same sense and $\sum_{i=1}^{n} B_{i} C=\sum_{i=1}^{n} C B_{i}=0$ in $L_{r^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ for $1 \leqq r \leqq 2$ and $\left(r^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1-r^{-1}$ or in $L_{r}(M, \eta)^{*}$ for $2 \leqq r \leqq \infty$ where $C \in \mathcal{L}_{q, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$, $r^{-1}=p^{-1}+q^{-1}-1$ and $1 \leqq r, p, q \leqq \infty$.

Proof. (1) Let $B$ be given by (2.9) with $z \in I_{1-(1 / p)}^{(n)}, w=1-(1 / p)$ $-\sum_{j=1}^{n} z_{j}$, and $B^{\prime}=B \Delta_{\eta}^{w}$. Then $B$ is equivalent to $B^{\prime}$ (due to $\Delta_{\eta}^{w} \eta=\eta$ ) in $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$ and $B^{\prime} \in \mathcal{L}_{p, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$.
(2) First consider the case $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$. Then $\sum B_{i} \eta=0$. For $x \in M_{0}$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(x \eta, \sum B_{i}^{*} \eta\right) & =\left(j\left(\sigma_{-i / 2}^{\eta}\left(x^{*}\right)\right) \eta, \sum B_{i}^{*} \eta\right)  \tag{7.8}\\
& =\left(j\left(\sigma_{(i / 2)-(i / p)}^{\eta}\left(x^{*}\right)\right) \sum B_{i} \eta, \eta\right)=0 .
\end{align*}
$$

Hence we have $\sum B_{i}^{*} \eta=0$. If $1 \leqq r \leqq 2$ in addition, we have $\sum C B_{i} \eta=0$ from $\sum B_{i} \eta=0$. Combining with the preceding result, we obtain $\sum C^{*} B_{i}^{*}$ $=0$ and hence $\sum B_{i} C=\sum\left(C^{*} B_{i}^{*}\right)^{*}=0$. If $2 \leqq r \leqq \infty$ and $A \in \mathcal{L}_{r}(M, \eta)$ $=L_{r}(M, \eta)$, then $\Sigma\left\langle C^{*} A, B_{i}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=0$ by Lemma 2.6. Since $\left\langle C^{*} A, B_{i}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}$ $=\left\langle A, C B_{i}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}$, we have $\sum C B_{i}=0$ in $L_{r}(M, \eta)^{*}$. Combining with the next result, this implies $\sum B_{i} C=0$ as before.

We now consider the case $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$. Then $\sum\left\langle B_{i}, A_{1}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=0$ for any $A_{1} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)=L_{p}(M, \eta)$. Since $x_{1} \eta \in L_{\infty}(M, \eta) \subset L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for all $x_{1}$ $\in M$, we take $A_{1}$ such that $A_{1} \eta=x_{1} \eta$. Then Lemma 2.2 and (1.27) imply

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\langle\bar{B}_{i}, A_{1}\right\rangle_{(\eta)} & =\omega_{\eta}\left(B_{i}^{*} A_{1}\right)=\omega_{\eta}\left(B_{i}^{*} x_{1}\right)  \tag{7.9}\\
& =\omega_{\eta}\left(x_{1} \Delta_{\eta}^{1 / p} B_{i}^{*}\right)=\omega_{\eta}\left(x^{*} B_{i}^{*}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

where $x \in M_{0}$ and $x_{1}$ is taken to be $\sigma_{-i / p}^{\eta}\left(x^{*}\right)$.
Hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle A, \sum B_{i}^{*}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=0 \tag{7.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $A \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ such that $A \eta=x \eta$ for $x \in M_{0}$.
If $x_{\alpha}$ tends to $x *$-strongly in $M$ with $\left\|x_{\alpha}\right\| \leqq\|x\|$, then $\omega_{\eta}\left(x_{\alpha}^{*} B_{i}^{*}\right)$ tends to $\omega_{\eta}\left(x^{*} B_{i}^{*}\right)$ by Lemma $A(v i)$. Since any $x \in M$ can be approximated by such $x_{\alpha} \in M_{0},(7.10)$ holds for $A$ such that $A \eta=x \eta$ for $x \in M$. In particular we may take $x=u \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{i t} J_{\eta}^{-i t} \in M$ where $u$ is a partial isometry in $M$. Since $x \eta=A(t) \eta$ for $A(t)=u d_{\xi, \eta}^{i t}$, we have (7.10) for $A=A(t)$.

By an analytic continuation and continuity, we obtain (7.10) for $A=$ $A(-i / p)$. Hence $\sum B_{i}^{*}=0$ in $L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$.

Since $C^{*} A \eta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for $A \in \mathcal{L}_{r}(M, \eta)$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle A, \sum C B_{i}^{*}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=\left\langle C^{*} A, \sum B_{i}^{*}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=0 \tag{7.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

and hence $\sum C B_{i}^{*}=0$ in $L_{r}(M, \eta)^{*}$. From $\sum C^{*} B_{i}^{*}=0$, we then obtain $\sum B_{i} C=\sum\left(C^{*} B_{i}^{*}\right)^{*}=0$.

Lemma 7.8. For $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty, x_{i} \in M, \xi_{i} \in H$ and $A_{i}=x_{i} d_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / p}, i=1$, $\cdots, n$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\left\|\sum_{i}^{n} A_{i} \eta\right\|_{p}^{(n)}\right)^{2}=\left\|\sum_{i, j}^{n} A_{i}^{*} A_{j}\right\|_{p / 2}^{\left(7_{2}, *\right)} \tag{7.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $A_{i}^{*} A_{j}=\Delta_{\xi_{i}, \eta}^{1 / p} x_{i}^{*} x_{j} \Delta_{\xi_{j}, \eta}^{1 / p} \in \mathcal{L}_{q}^{*}(M, \eta)$ with $q^{-1}=1-2 p^{-1}$ are considered as elements of $L_{q}(M, \eta)^{*}$ if $2 \leqq p \leqq 4$ and as elements of $L_{p / 2}(M, \eta)$ if $4 \leqq p \leqq \infty$. The norm $\|\cdot\|_{p / 2}^{\left.(n 7)^{*}\right)}$ denotes the norm in the dual space $L_{q}(M, \eta)^{*}$ if $2 \leqq p \leqq 4$ and $\|\cdot\|_{p / 2}^{(\pi)}$ if $4 \leqq p \leqq \infty$. (The two coincides for $p=4$.)

Proof. If $p=\infty$, the statement is a property of $C^{*}$-norm. Let $2 \leqq p<\infty$. By Lemma 4.1 (1), there exists a partial isometry $u$ in $M$ and $\xi \in H$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i}^{n} A_{i} \eta=A \eta, \quad A=u \Delta_{\epsilon, \eta}^{1 / p}, \tag{7.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

$u^{*} u=s^{M}(\xi)$ and $\left\|\sum_{i}^{n} A_{i} \eta\right\|_{p}^{(\pi)}=\|\xi\|^{2 / p}$. By Lemma 7.7, we have $\sum_{i} A_{i}^{*} A_{j}$ $-A^{*} A_{j}=0$ for all $j_{n}$ and hence $\sum_{i, j} A_{i}^{*} A_{j}-A^{*} A=0$ in $\mathcal{L}_{q}^{*}(M, \eta)$. If $4 \leqq p$, this implies $\sum_{i, j}^{n} A_{i}^{*} A_{j} \eta=A^{*} A \eta=\Delta_{\varepsilon, \eta}^{2 / p} \eta$ and (7.12) holds due to $\left\|\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{2 / p} \eta\right\|_{p / 2}^{(\eta)}=\|\xi\|^{4 / p}$ (Lemma 4.1 (1)).

Now let $2 \leqq p<4$. For $x \in M_{0}$, we have $x \eta \in L_{q}(M, \eta), x \eta=y \eta$ for $y=j\left(\sigma_{-i / 2}^{(\eta)}\left(x^{*}\right)\right) \in M_{0}^{\prime}$ (elements of $M^{\prime}$ entire analytic for $\left.\sigma_{t}^{\prime \eta}(y)=\Delta_{\eta}^{-i t} y d_{\eta}^{i t}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\langle x, \sum_{i, j}^{n} A_{i}^{*} A_{j}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=\omega_{\eta}\left(\sum A_{j}^{*} A_{i} x\right)  \tag{7.14}\\
& =\sum_{i, j}^{n}\left(A_{i} x \eta, A_{j} \eta\right)=\sum_{i, j}^{n}\left(A_{i} y \eta, A_{j} \eta\right)
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =\sum_{i, j}\left(\sigma_{i / p}^{\prime \eta}(y) A_{i} \eta, A_{j} \eta\right)=\left(\sigma_{i / p}^{\prime \eta}(y) A \eta, A \eta\right) \\
& =(A y \eta, A \eta)=\left\langle x, A^{*} A\right\rangle_{(\eta)} \\
& =\left\langle x, \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{2 / p}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}
\end{aligned}
$$

By the same proof as the preceding Lemma, (7.14) for $x \in M_{0}$ implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle B, \sum_{i, j}^{n} A_{i}^{*} A_{j}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=\left\langle B, A_{\xi, \eta}^{2 / p}\right\rangle_{(\eta)} \tag{7.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $B \in L_{q}(M, \eta)$. Hence $\sum_{i, j}^{n} A_{i}^{*} A_{j}=J_{\xi, \eta}^{2 / p}$ in $L_{q}(M, \eta)^{*}$. For $2<p \leqq 4$, we have $2 \leqq q<\infty$ and hence we obtain by Lemma 7.4

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\sum_{i, j}^{n} A_{i}^{*} A_{j}\right\|_{p / 2}^{\left(\eta_{1}^{n+1}\right)}=\left\|\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{2 / p}\right\|_{p / 2}^{\left(r_{1}^{*}\right)}=\|\xi\|^{4 / p}=\left(\left\|\sum A_{i} \eta\right\|_{P}^{(\eta)}\right)^{2} . \tag{7.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $p=2$, then (7.14) for $x \in M_{0}$ implies the same for $x \in M$ by the approximation argument of the preceding Lemma. Together with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle x \eta, \Delta_{\xi, \eta}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=\left(\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2} x \eta, \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta\right)=\left(\xi, x^{*} \xi\right), \tag{7.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

(7.14) for $x \in M$ implies

$$
\left\|\sum_{i, j}^{n} A_{i}^{*} A_{j}\right\|_{1}^{(r, *)}=\|\xi\|^{2}=\left(\left\|\sum A_{i} \eta\right\|_{2}^{(\eta)}\right)^{2}
$$

## § 8. Clarkson's Inequality

In this section, we shall show Clarkson's inequality for $L_{p}(M, \eta)$, $2 \leqq p<\infty$. It implies the reflexivity of the Banach space $L_{p}(M, \eta), 1<p$ $<\infty$.

Lemma 8. 1. For $2 \leqq p<\infty$ and $\zeta_{1}, \zeta_{2} \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$, the following inequality holds,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\right)^{p}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}\right)^{p} \leqq 2^{p-1}\left\{\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(j)}\right)^{p}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\right)^{p}\right\} . \tag{8.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The following inequality is the key point of the proof:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|\left\langle\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}, \zeta_{1}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(7)}+\left\langle\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}, \zeta_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}\right|  \tag{8.2}\\
& \quad \leqq 2^{1-(1 / p)}\left\{\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(7)}\right)^{p}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(7)}\right)^{p}\right\}^{1 / p}\left\{\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{\left(p^{\prime}\right)}}^{\left(p^{p^{\prime}}\right.}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{\prime}}^{\left(T^{\prime \prime}\right)}\right)^{p^{\prime}}\right\}^{1 / p^{\prime}}\right.
\end{align*}
$$

where $p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1$ and $\zeta_{1}^{\prime}$ and $\zeta_{2}^{\prime}$ in $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$. Before proving (8.2),
we derive (8.1) from (8.2). By Notation 2.3, Remark 7.5, and Lemma 4.1 (1), there exist $\zeta_{1}^{\prime}$ and $\zeta_{2}^{\prime}$ in $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}, \zeta_{1}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=\left\|\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\left\|\zeta_{1}^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{\prime}}^{\left(\eta^{\prime}\right)}, \tag{8.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}, \zeta_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(7)}=\left\|\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\left\|\zeta_{2}^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{\prime}}^{\left(\eta^{2}\right)} . \tag{8.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

We have still freedom of choosing $s=\left\|\zeta_{1}^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{*}}^{\left(n^{*}\right)}$ and $t=\left\|\zeta_{2}^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{\left(n^{\prime}\right)}}^{(\text {and hence }}$ we choose them such that $|s|+|t| \neq 0$ and

$$
\begin{align*}
\| \zeta_{1}+ & \zeta_{2}\left\|_{p}^{(\overline{)})} s+\right\| \zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2} \|_{p}^{(\bar{y})} t  \tag{8.5}\\
& =\left\{\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(y)}\right)^{p}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(y)}\right)^{p}\right\}^{1 / p}\left(s^{p^{p}}+t^{p^{\prime}}\right)^{1 / p^{\prime}}
\end{align*}
$$

Substituting (8.3) and (8.4) into the left hand side of (8.2) and using (8.5), we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\{\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(7)}\right)^{p}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(j)}\right)^{p}\right\}^{1 / p}  \tag{8.6}\\
& \quad \leqq 2^{1-(1 / p)}\left\{\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(j)}\right)^{p}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(y)}\right)^{p}\right\}^{1 / p}
\end{align*}
$$

We now prove the inequality (8.2). For $\zeta_{i}=u_{i} \Delta_{\xi_{i}, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta$ and $\zeta_{i}^{\prime}=u_{i}^{\prime} \Delta_{\xi_{1^{\prime}}^{1 / p}}^{p}$ $(i=1,2)$ (cf. Lemma 3.6), we consider the following function,

$$
\begin{align*}
F(z)= & \omega_{\eta}\left(\Delta_{\xi_{1}^{\prime}, \eta}^{1-2} u_{1}^{\prime} * u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{z}\right)+\omega_{\eta}\left(\Delta_{\xi_{1}^{\prime}, \eta}^{1-z} u_{1}^{\prime} * u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{z}\right)  \tag{8.7}\\
& +\omega_{\eta}\left(\Delta_{\xi_{2}^{2}, \eta}^{1-2} u_{2}^{\prime} * u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{z}\right)-\omega_{\eta}\left(\Delta_{\varepsilon_{2}^{2}, \eta}^{1-z} u_{2}^{\prime} * u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}^{2}, \eta}^{z}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

By Lemma A, $F(z)$ is a continuous and bounded function of $z$ for $0 \leqq \operatorname{Re} \approx \leqq 1 / 2$, holomorphic in the interior of this strip region. We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
|F(1 / p)|=\left|\left\langle\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}, \zeta_{1}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(n)}+\left\langle\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}, \zeta_{2}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(n)}\right| \tag{8.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have used Lemma 2.6 for $\left\langle\zeta_{1} \pm \zeta_{2}, \zeta_{k}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=\left\langle\zeta_{1}, \zeta_{k}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)} \pm\left\langle\zeta_{2}, \zeta_{k}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
|F(i t)|= & \mid \omega_{\eta}\left(\Delta_{\xi_{1}^{1}, \eta}^{1-i t} u_{1}^{\prime} * u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{i t}\right)+\omega_{\eta}\left(\Delta_{\xi_{1}^{\prime}, \eta}^{1-i t} u_{1}^{\prime} * u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{i t}\right)  \tag{8.9}\\
& +\omega_{\eta}\left(\Delta_{\xi_{2}^{1}, \eta}^{1-i t} u_{2}^{\prime} * u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{i t}\right)-\omega_{\eta}\left(\Delta_{\xi_{2}^{2}, \eta}^{1-i t} u_{2}^{\prime} * u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{i t}\right) \mid \\
\leqq & 2\left(\left\|\xi_{1}^{\prime}\right\|^{2}+\left\|\xi_{2}^{\prime}\right\|^{2}\right) \\
= & 2\left\{\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{\prime}}^{\left(\eta^{\prime}\right)}\right)^{p^{\prime}}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{\prime}}^{\left(\eta^{\prime}\right)}\right)^{p^{\prime}}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

where we have used (1.25), and

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mid F(  \tag{8.10}\\
&(1 / 2)+i t) \mid \\
&= \mid\left(u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta+u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta, u_{1}^{\prime} \Delta_{\xi_{1}^{\prime}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta\right) \\
&+\left(u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta-u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{(12)+i t} \eta, u_{2}^{\prime} \Delta_{\xi_{1}^{2}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta\right) \mid
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \leqq\left\|u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta+u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta\right\|\left\|\Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{1 / 2}\right\| \\
& +\left\|u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta-u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta\right\|\left\|\Delta_{\xi_{2}^{2}, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta\right\| \\
& \leqq\left\{\left\|u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta+u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta\right\|^{2}\right. \\
& \left.+\left\|u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta-u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta\right\|^{2}\right\}^{1 / 2} \\
& \times\left\{\left\|\Delta_{\xi_{1}^{1}, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta\right\|^{2}+\left\|\Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta\right\|^{2}\right\}^{1 / 2} \\
& =\left\{2\left(\left\|u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta\right\|^{2}+\left\|u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} \eta\right\|^{2}\right)\right\}^{1 / 2} \\
& \times\left\{\left\|\xi_{1}^{\prime}\right\|^{2}+\left\|\xi_{2}^{\prime}\right\|^{2}\right\}^{1 / 2} \\
& \leqq \sqrt{2}\left\{\left\|\xi_{1}\right\|^{2}+\left\|\xi_{2}\right\|^{2}\right\}^{1 / 2}\left\{\left\|\xi_{1}^{\prime}\right\|^{2}+\left\|\xi_{2}^{\prime}\right\|^{2}\right\}^{1 / 2} \\
& =\sqrt{2}\left\{\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(j)}\right)^{p}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(j)}\right)^{p}\right\}^{1 / 2} \\
& \times\left\{\left(\left\|\xi_{1}^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{\prime}}^{\left(\eta^{p}\right)}\right)^{p^{\prime}}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{p^{\prime}}}^{\left(\eta^{*}\right)}\right)^{p^{\prime}}\right\}^{1 / 2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the three line theorem, the inequality (8.2) follows.

A Banach space $X$ with norm $\|\cdot\|$ is said to be uniformly convex if for each $\varepsilon$ with $0<\varepsilon \leqq 2$ there exists a $\delta(\varepsilon)>0$ such that $x, y \in X$, $\|x\| \leqq 1,\|y\| \leqq 1$ and $\|x-y\| \geqq \varepsilon$ imply $\|(x+y) / 2\| \leqq 1-\delta(\varepsilon)$.

Proposition 8. 2. $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is uniformly convex for $2 \leqq p<\infty$.

Proof. From Clarkson's inequality

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\right)^{p}+\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(7)}\right)^{p} \leqq 2^{p} \tag{8.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $\zeta_{1}, \zeta_{2} \in L_{p}(M, \eta), 2 \leqq p<\infty$ satisfying $\left\|\zeta_{j}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)} \leqq 1, j=1,2$. If $\left\|\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(\pi)}$ $\geqq \varepsilon$, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\left(\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right) / 2\right\|_{p}^{(m)} & \leqq\left\{1-\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}-\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(m)} / 2\right)^{p}\right\}^{1 / p} \\
& \leqq\left\{1-(\varepsilon / 2)^{p}\right\}^{1 / p}
\end{aligned}
$$

which shows the uniform convexity of $L_{p}(M, \eta), 2 \leqq p<\infty$.

Corollary 8. 3. $L_{p}(M, \eta)(2 \leqq p<\infty)$ is a reflexive Banach space.

Proof. By Proposition 8.2 and Milman's theorem (§ 26, 6. (4) of [14]).

## §9. Uniform Strong Differentiability of the

## Norm for $\mathbb{1}<p<\infty$

Let $X$ be a Banach space. Its norm $\|\cdot\|$ is said to be uniformly strongly differentiable if for any $x \in X$ satisfying $x \neq 0$ and $\|x\| \leqq 1$ there exists a continuous real linear functional $u_{x}$ on $X$ and a monotone increasing function $\delta_{x}(\rho)(\rho>0)$ such that $\lim _{\rho \rightarrow 0} \delta_{x}(\rho)=0$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\|x+y\|-\|x\|-\left\langle u_{x}, y\right\rangle\right) \leqq\|y\| \delta_{x}(\|y\|) \tag{9.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $y$. In this section, we show the uniform strong differentiability of the norm $\|\cdot\|_{p}^{(n)}, 1<p<\infty$. The uniform strong differentiability of the norm is equivalent to the uniform convexity of dual norm in the dual space ( $\S 26,10$. (12) of [14]) and implies the reflexivity of the space. Therefore we have only to consider the case $2<p<\infty$.

Lemma 9.1. The norm $\|\cdot\|_{p}^{(7)}(2<p<\infty)$ is uniformly strongly differentiable.

Proof. Let $n<p \leqq 2 n, n=2,3, \cdots$. We prove by induction on $n$.
As a preliminary remark, $L_{q^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ for $2 \leqq q^{\prime}<\infty$ is uniformly convex by Proposition 8.2 and hence the norm of its dual $L_{q^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$ is uniformly strongly differentiable.

Let $\zeta_{1}, \zeta_{2} \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $\zeta_{j}=u_{j} D_{\xi_{j, \eta}, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta$ be the polar decomposition given by Lemma 4.1 (1). Then each term in

$$
\begin{align*}
\zeta & =\left|u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{1 / p}+u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{1 / p}\right|^{2}  \tag{9.2}\\
& =\Delta_{\xi_{1}^{2}, \eta}^{2 / p}+\Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{1 / p} u_{2}^{*} u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{1 / p}+\Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{1 / p} u_{1}^{*} u_{2} \Delta_{\varepsilon_{2}, \eta}^{1 / p}+\Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{2 / p}
\end{align*}
$$

is in $L_{q}(M, \eta)$ with $q=p / 2$ if $n>2$ due to Lemma 7.3 and in $L_{q^{\prime}}(M$, $\eta)^{*}\left(\left(q^{\prime}\right)^{-1}+q^{-1}=1\right)$ if $n=2$ due to Remark 2.7. Since $2 \leqq q^{\prime}<\infty$ for $n=2$, the norm of $L_{q^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$ is uniformly strongly differentiable. For other $n$, the norm of $L_{q}(M, \eta)$ is uniformly strongly differentiable by inductive assumption. In either case, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\right)^{2}=\|\zeta\|_{q}^{(\eta, *)}, \quad\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\right)^{2}=\left\|\Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{1 / q}\right\|_{q}^{(\eta, *)} \tag{9.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

by Lemma 7.8 and the uniform strong differentiability implies
where $u$ is a continuous real linear functional on $L_{q}(M, \eta)$ (or on $L_{q^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$ if $\left.2 \leqq p \leqq 4\right)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta^{\prime}=\Delta_{\varepsilon_{2}, \eta}^{1 / p} u_{2}^{*} u_{1} \Delta_{\varepsilon_{1}, \eta}^{1 / p}+\Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{1 / p} u_{1}^{*} u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{1 / p}+\Delta_{\varepsilon_{2}, \eta}^{1 / q} \in \operatorname{Lin}\left(\mathcal{L}_{q^{\prime}}^{*}(M, \eta)\right) \tag{9.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the linear hull $\operatorname{Lin}\left(\mathcal{L}_{q^{\prime}}^{*}(M, \eta)\right)$ is in $L_{q}(M, \eta)$ if $4 \leqq p \leqq \infty$ or in $L_{q^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$ if $2<p \leqq 4$, and $\delta(\rho)$ is a monotone increasing function of $\rho>0$ vanishing as $\rho \rightarrow 0$. Both $u$ and $\delta$ may depend on $\zeta_{1}$ through $\xi_{1}$ but they are independent of $\zeta_{2}$. We have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|\Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{1 / q}\right\|_{q}^{(\eta, *)}=\left\|\hat{\xi}_{2}\right\|^{4 / p}=\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\right)^{2},  \tag{9.6}\\
& \left\|\zeta^{\prime}\right\|_{q}^{(\eta, *)} \leqq 2\left\|\xi_{2}\right\|^{2 / p}\left\|\xi_{1}\right\|^{2 / p}+\left\|\xi_{2}\right\|^{4 / p} \\
& =\left(2\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}+\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\right)\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)},
\end{align*}
$$

where equalities are due to Lemma 4.1 (1) and Lemma 7.4, the inequality for $2<p \leqq 4$ is due to Lemma 2.8 and Lemma 7.4 and the inequality for $4 \leqq p$ is due to Lemma 7.3. Hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(j)}\right)^{2}-\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(j)}\right)^{2}-v\left(\zeta_{2}\right)\right| \leqq\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(n)} \delta_{1}\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\right) \tag{9.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta_{1}(\rho) \equiv\left(2\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(\pi)}+\rho\right) \delta\left(2\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(\pi)} \rho+\rho^{2}\right)+\rho\|u\| \tag{9.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
v\left(\zeta_{2}\right) \equiv u\left(\Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{1 / p} u_{2}^{*} u_{1} \Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{1 / p}+\Delta_{\xi_{1}, \eta}^{1 / p} u_{1}^{*} u_{2} \Delta_{\xi_{2}, \eta}^{1 / p}\right) . \tag{9.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $v$ is a real linear functional of $\zeta_{2}$ (for fixed $\zeta_{1}$ ) by Lemma 7.7 and is continuous by Lemma 7.3 for $4 \leqq p \leqq \infty$ and by Lemma 2.8 (in view of Lemma 2.6) for $2<p \leqq 4$. From this we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\left\|\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}-\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(7)}\right| \leqq\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(n)} \sigma\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(m)}\right), \tag{9.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma(\rho)=\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(m)}\right)^{-1}\left(\|v\|+\delta_{1}(\rho)\right) \tag{9.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left|\left\|\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right\|\left\|_{p}^{(n)}-\right\| \zeta_{1} \|_{p}^{(n)}-\left(2\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}\right)^{-1} v\left(\zeta_{2}\right)\right|  \tag{9.13}\\
& \quad \leqq\left|\left(2\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}\right)^{-1}-\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}+\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}\right)^{-1}\right|\left|v\left(\zeta_{2}\right)\right| \\
& \quad+\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}+\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}+\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}\right)^{-1}\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(7)} \delta_{1}\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}\right) \\
& \leqq\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(n)} \delta_{2}\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta_{2}(\rho)=\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(j)}\right)^{-1} \delta_{1}(\rho)+\|v\| \sigma(\rho) \rho\left(2\left\{\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p}^{(ग)}\right\}^{2}\right)^{-1} \tag{9.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\delta_{2}(\rho) \rightarrow 0$ as $\rho \rightarrow 0$ and $\delta_{2}(\rho)$ is monotone increasing, we have the uniform strong differentiability.

Corollary 9.2. $L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ is uniformly convex for $2<p<\infty$.

Proof. By the equivalence of the uniform strong differentiability derived in Lemma 9.1 and the uniform convexity of the dual space, as quoted before Lemma 9.1.

## § 10. Polar Decomposition in $\mathbb{L}_{p}(M, \eta), \mathbb{1} \leqq p<2$

Lemma 10.1. Let $2 \leqq p<\infty$ and $p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1$.
(1) For $\zeta_{1}, \zeta_{2} \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta), \zeta_{1}=\zeta_{2}$ in $L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ if and only if $\zeta_{1}=\zeta_{2}$ (i.e. $u_{1}=u_{2}, \phi_{1}=\phi_{2}$ for $\zeta_{j}=u_{j} \Delta_{\phi_{j}, \eta}^{1, p^{\prime}} \mathcal{L}, j=1,2$ ). (Uniqueness of polar decomposition)
(2) $\quad \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)=L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*} . \quad$ (Existence of polar decomposition.)

Proof. (1) Let $\zeta_{j}=u_{j} \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p^{\prime}} \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ and $\zeta_{j}^{\prime}=u_{j} \Delta_{\phi_{j, \eta}}^{1 / p} \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ $(j=1,2)$. Then $\left(\zeta_{j}, \zeta_{j}^{\prime}\right)=\phi_{j}(1)=\left\|\zeta_{j}\right\|_{\mathbb{P}^{p}}^{\left(\eta^{\prime}\right)}\left\|\zeta_{j}^{\prime}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}$ due to Lemmas 4.1 (1) and 7.4. Since $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is uniformly convex (Proposition 8.2), $\zeta_{j}^{\prime}$ satisfying such a relation and with a given $p$-norm is uniquely determined by $\zeta_{j}$. If $\zeta_{1}=\zeta_{2}$, then $\left\|\zeta_{1}^{\prime}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\phi_{1}(1)^{1 / p}=\left(\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|_{p^{p}}^{\left(\eta^{*}\right)}\right)^{p^{\prime / p}}=\left(\left\|\zeta_{2}\right\|_{p^{p}}^{\left(\eta^{*}\right)}\right)^{p^{\prime / p}}=\left\|\zeta_{2}^{\prime}\right\|_{p}^{(n)}$ and hence $\zeta_{1}^{\prime}=\zeta_{2}^{\prime}$. The uniqueness of the polar decomposition in $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ (Lemma 4.1 (1)) then implies $u_{1}=u_{2}, \phi_{1}=\phi_{2}$.
(2) We already know that $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ can be imbedded in $L_{p}(M$, $\eta)^{*}$ (Remark 2.7 and Lemma 7.4). Let $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$. Since $u=0$, $\phi=0$ gives $0=u d_{\phi, 4}^{1 / p^{\prime}} \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$, we assume $\zeta \neq 0$. Then there exists a nonzero $\zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ such that $\left(\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right)=\|\zeta\|_{p}^{\left(n^{*}\right)}\left\|\zeta^{\prime}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}$. Let $\zeta^{\prime}=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta^{1 / p} \eta}$ be the polar decomposition (Lemma 4.1(1)). Then $\zeta^{\prime \prime}=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p^{\prime}} \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M$, $\eta$ ) satisfies $\left\langle\zeta^{\prime \prime}, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=\left\|\zeta^{\prime \prime}\right\|_{p}^{\left(\eta^{*}\right)}\left\|\zeta^{\prime}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}$. By the uniform convexity of $L_{p}$ $(M, \eta)^{*}$ given by Corollary 9.2 , such $\zeta^{\prime \prime}$ is unique up to multiplication by a positive number $r$, i.e. $\zeta=r \zeta^{\prime \prime}$. Let $\psi=r^{p^{\prime} \phi} \phi$. Then $\zeta=u \Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{1 / p^{\prime}}$ as is easily seen from the formula $\Delta_{s \phi, \eta}=s \Delta_{\phi, \eta}$. Therefore any $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ is in $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$.

Remark 10.2. Lemma holds also for $p^{\prime}=1$ if we replace $L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ by $M_{*}$ due to the known polar decomposition of $\phi \in M_{*}$ (Theorem 1.14.4 of [19]) and the correspondence given by Remark 5.7.

Lemma 10.3. Let $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$ and $\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1-p^{-1}$. If $\Psi \in H$ and $\zeta \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ coincide as elements of $L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ (i.e. $\left(\Psi, \zeta^{\prime} \eta\right)_{H}=\left\langle\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}$ for all $\left.\zeta^{\prime} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)\right)$, then $\eta$ is in the domain of $\zeta$ and $\Psi=\zeta \eta$.

Proof. Let $\zeta=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p^{\prime}}, u^{*} u=s(\phi)$ and take the special elements $\zeta^{\prime}=x \eta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ with $x \in M$. We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\Psi, x \eta)=\left\langle\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}=\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta, \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{\left(1 / p^{\prime}\right)-(1 / 2)} u^{*} x \eta\right) \tag{10.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since the set of $x \in M$ with $u^{*} x=0$ is $\left(1-u u^{*}\right) M$ and $\eta$ is cyclic, $\left(1-u u^{*}\right) \Psi=0$. Hence $(\Psi, x \eta)=\left(u^{*} \Psi, u^{*} x \eta\right)$ and (10.1) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta, \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{\left(1 / p^{\prime}\right)-(1 / 2)} \Phi\right)=\left(u^{*} \Psi, \Phi\right) \tag{10.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

whenever $\Phi=u^{*} x \eta+\Phi^{\prime}$ with $\Phi^{\prime} \in\left(1-u^{*} u\right) H$ because $\Delta_{\phi, \eta} \Phi^{\prime}=0$ due to $s\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}\right)=s(\phi)$. Since $u^{*} M \eta=u^{*} u M \eta$ is dense in $u^{*} u H$ and $u^{*} u M \eta+$ $\left(1-u^{*} u\right) H$ (which contains $M \eta$ ) is a core of $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{\left(1 / p^{\prime}\right)-(1 / 2)}$, we have $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta \in$ $D\left({\left.\delta_{\phi, \eta}^{(1 / p}\right)-(1 / 2)}^{(1)}\right.$ and,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p^{\prime}} \eta=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{\left(1 / p^{\prime}\right)-(1 / 2)} \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta=u^{*} \Psi . \tag{10.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore $\Psi=u u^{*} \Psi=u d_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p^{\prime}} \eta$.

Lemma 10.4. Let $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$ and $p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1$. Under the identification of $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ with $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ with $L_{p}(M$, $\eta)^{*},\left\langle\zeta^{\prime}, \zeta\right\rangle_{(\eta)}$ defined by (1.29) for $\zeta \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta), \zeta^{\prime} \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ is a continuous sesquilinear form on $L_{p}(M, \eta) \otimes L_{p}(M, \eta) *$ coinciding with the inner product in $H$ if $\zeta^{\prime}$ is in $H$, and hermitian in the sense $\overline{\left\langle\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}}=\left\langle\zeta^{\prime}, \zeta\right\rangle_{(\eta)}$.

Proof. Hermiticity follows from the definition (1.22) of $\omega_{n}$. Then conjugate linearity of $\left\langle\zeta^{\prime}, \zeta\right\rangle_{(\eta)}$ in $\zeta$ follows from Lemma 2.6 while the linearity in $\zeta^{\prime}$ follows from the identification of $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ with $L_{p}(M$, $\eta)^{*}$ through this form. The continuity $\left|\left\langle\zeta^{\prime}, \zeta\right\rangle_{(\eta)}\right| \leqq\left\|\zeta^{\prime}\right\|_{p^{\left(\eta^{\prime}\right)}}^{\left(\eta \zeta \|_{p}^{(\eta)}\right.}$ precedes the identification of $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ with $L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ (Lemma 7.4). By

Corollary 2.1, $\left\langle\zeta^{\prime}, \zeta\right\rangle_{(n)}$ coincides with the inner product in $H$ if $\zeta^{\prime}$ is in $H$ (Lemma 10.3).

Lemma 10.5. For $1<p \leqq 2$ and $\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1-p^{-1}, \Psi \in H$ can be identified with an element of $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$ through the inner product in $H$. Then $\Psi_{1}=\Psi_{2}$ in $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$ only if $\Psi_{1}=\Psi_{2}$ in $H$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\Psi\|_{p}^{(\pi)}=\|\Psi\|_{p}^{\left(r^{\prime}\right)}, \tag{10.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

$H$ is dense in $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$ and $L_{p}(M, \eta)=L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$, where the equality (10.4) holds for all $\Psi \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$. For $A=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta),\|A\|$ $=\phi(1)^{1 / p}$.

Proof. By Lemma 7.1 (2), $\Psi \in H$ is in $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$ and $\|\Psi\|_{p}^{(\eta)}$ $\geqq\|\Psi\|_{p}^{\left(\eta^{\prime}\right)}$. By Lemmas 10.1 and 10.3 , there exists $\zeta \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ such that $\Psi=\zeta \eta$. Lemmas 7.4 and 4.1 (2) imply (10.4). It now follows that $\|\zeta\|_{p}^{(7)}$ is a seminorm on $H$. Since $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ is dense in $H$ (Remark 6.2), it must be a norm.

Since $H$ separates $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)(\subset H), H$ is weakly dense subspace of $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}\left(L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)\right.$ is the dual of $\left.L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}\right)$. By the Hahn-Banach separation theorem the norm closure of $H$ must coincide with its weak closure. Therefore the completion of $H$ relative to $\|\cdot\|_{p}^{(\eta)}$ can be identified with $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$.

By (10.4) and Lemma 7.4, we have $\|A\|_{p}^{(\pi)}=\phi(1)^{1 / p}$.

Lemma 10.6. Let $1<p \leqq 2$. The subset $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)$ of $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ consisting of all $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}, \phi \in M_{*}^{+}$, coincides with $L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)$ through the identification of $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $L_{p}^{*}(M, \eta)$.

Proof. By Lemmas 10.3 and 3.5, $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{+}(M, \eta) \cap H$ is contained in $V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)}$. The set of vector states $\omega_{y_{\eta}}$ with $y \in M_{0}$ is norm dense in $M_{+}^{*}$ because $M_{0} \eta$ is dense in $H$. If $\left\|\phi_{n}-\phi\right\| \rightarrow 0$ in $M_{*},\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1-p^{-1}$ and $\zeta \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\left\langle\Delta_{\phi_{n}^{1}, \eta}^{1 / p} \zeta\right\rangle_{(\eta)}-\left\langle\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}, \zeta\right\rangle_{(\eta)}\right| \tag{10.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

tends to 0 due to Lemma A (vi). Since $\left\|\Delta_{\phi_{n}, \eta}^{1 / p}\right\|_{p}^{(\pi)}=\phi_{n}(1)^{1 / p}$ is uniformly
bounded, the weak closure of $V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)}$ in $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ contains $\mathcal{L}_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)$. Again the norm closure of the convex set $V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)}$ coincides with its weak closure. It remains to prove the converse. For this purpose we use two properties of $\Psi \in V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)}$.

By Theorem 3 (2) of [2], $\Psi$ is in the domain of $J_{p}(\eta, \eta)$ defined by (11.3) and invariant under $J_{p}(\eta, \eta)$. Since $J_{p}(\eta, \eta)$ has the unique continuous extension $J_{p}(\eta, \eta)$ to $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ as a conjugate linear isometry, as will be shown in Lemma 11.2, the invariance property will be preserved in the closure of $V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)}$. As will be shown in the same Lemma, $u d_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}$ $\in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ will be mapped by this isomorphism to $u^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{\mu, \eta}^{1 / p}}^{1 / p}$ and the invariance implies $u=u^{*}$ and $\phi\left(u^{*} x u\right)=\phi(x)$ for all $x \in M$ (i.e. $u$ commutes with $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}$ ).

For $y \in M_{0}^{\prime}$ and $\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1-p^{-1}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\sigma_{-i / p}^{\prime \eta}\left(y^{*}\right) y \eta & =\Delta_{\eta}^{-1 /(2 p)}\left\{\sigma_{i /(2 p)}^{\prime}(y)\right\} * \sigma_{i /(2 p)}^{\prime} \eta  \tag{10.6}\\
& \in V_{\alpha}^{1 /\left(2 p^{\prime}\right)}
\end{align*}
$$

by the definition $V_{\eta}^{\alpha}=\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{\alpha} M_{+} \eta\right)^{-}=\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{\alpha-(1 / 2)} M_{+}^{\prime} \eta\right)^{-}$for $0 \leqq \alpha \leqq 1 / 2$. (Note that $y \eta=\Delta_{\eta}^{1 / 2} j\left(y^{*}\right) \eta$ for $y \in M^{\prime}$.) By Theorem 3 (5) of [2], $\Psi \in V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)}$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\Psi, \Phi) \geqq 0, \quad \Phi=\sigma_{-i / p}^{\prime \eta}\left(y^{*}\right) y \eta \tag{10.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\Phi=x \eta$ with $x=j\left(\sigma_{i / 2}^{\prime \eta}\left(\sigma_{-i / p}^{\prime \eta}\left(y^{*}\right) y\right)\right)^{*} \in M$, we have $\Phi \in L_{\infty}(M, \eta) \subset$ $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$. By Lemma 10.5, we obtain

$$
\langle\Psi, x\rangle_{(\eta)} \geqq 0
$$

for the above $x$ and any $\Psi$ in the closure of $V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)}$ in $L_{p}(M, \eta)$. By definition (1.22) and (2.11), we have for such $\Psi=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \langle\Psi, x\rangle_{(\eta)}=\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 /(2 p)} \eta, \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 /(2 p)} u^{*} x \eta\right) \\
& =\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 /(2 p)} \eta, \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 /(2 p)} u^{*} \sigma_{-i / p}^{\prime \eta}\left(y^{*}\right) y \eta\right) \\
& =\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 /(2 p)} y \eta, \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 /(2 p)} u^{*} y \eta\right) \\
& =\left(u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1}(2 p) y \eta, \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1}\left(\frac{2 p}{(2 p)} y \eta\right),\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

where we have used the first result above that $u$ commutes with $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}$. Since $M_{0}^{\prime} \eta=M_{0} \eta$ is a core of $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2}$ (by the definition of $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}$ and by $\left\|\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} x \eta\right\|$ $=\left\|x^{*} \eta\right\|$ ), and since $s\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}\right)=s(\phi)=u^{*} u, \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 /(2 p)} M_{0}^{\prime} \eta$ is dense in $u^{*} u H$.

Therefore $u \geqq 0$ and hence $u=s(\phi)$. Therefore any $\Psi$ in the closure of $V_{\eta}^{1 /(2 p)}$ in $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is of the form $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta$.

Remark 10.7. In the first part of the above proof, $\left\|\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}\right\|_{p}^{(m)}$ $=\phi_{n}(1)^{1 / p} \rightarrow \phi(1)^{1 / p}=\left\|\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}$. Therefore $\Delta_{\phi n, \eta}^{1 / 2}$ actually converges to $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}$ in $L_{p}$-norm due to uniform convexity.

## § 11. Change of the Reference Vector $\eta$

In this section, we discuss the change of reference vector $\eta$ and the associated isomorphism $\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ from $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ to $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$. Let $\eta_{1}$ and $\eta_{2}$ be two cyclic and separating vectors.

Lemma 11.1. Let $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty$. The mapping $J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) \zeta=J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}} \Delta_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta \tag{11.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $\zeta \in L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ is a conjugate linear isometric map of Banach spaces $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ and $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$. If $2 \leqq p<\infty$, it maps $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ (with $u^{*} u=s(\phi)$ ) to $u^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{u}, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p}\left(=\left\{u d_{\phi, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p}\right\}^{*}\right) \in \mathcal{L}_{p}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$, where $\phi_{u}(x)$ $=\phi\left(u^{*} x u\right)$. If $p=\infty$, it maps $x \eta_{1} \in L_{\infty}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ to $x^{*} \eta_{2} \in L_{\infty}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$.

Proof. Let $2 \leqq p<\infty$ and $\zeta=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \eta_{1}$ be the polar decomposition given by Lemma 4.1 (1). By Lemma C. 2,

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}} \Delta_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\left(u \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \eta_{1}\right)=\Delta_{\phi, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p} u^{*} \eta_{2}=u^{*} \Delta_{\phi u, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p} \eta_{2} . \tag{11.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

It follows that

$$
\|\zeta\|_{p}^{\left(\eta_{1}\right)}=\phi(1)^{1 / p}=\phi_{u}(1)^{1 / p}=\left\|J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) \zeta\right\|_{p}^{\left(\eta_{2}\right)} .
$$

The case $p=\infty$ follows from $\overline{S_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}}=J_{\eta_{2}, v_{1}} \Delta_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}^{1 / 2}$.

Lemma 11.2. Let $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$. The mapping $J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ defined on $\zeta \in D\left(\Delta_{\eta_{2} \eta_{1}}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\right) b y$

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) \zeta=J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}} \Delta_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta \tag{11.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

has a unique extension (again denoted by $J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ ) to a conjugate linear isometric map of $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ onto $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$. It maps $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p_{1}} \in$
$\mathcal{L}_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ to $u^{*} \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$. Moreover $J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ and $J_{p^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}\right)$ are adjoint of each other relative to the form $\left\langle\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}$ for $\zeta \in L_{p}(M$, $\eta)$ and $\zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$, where $p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1$.

Proof. Let $\zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p^{\prime}}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$ and $\zeta \in D\left(\bigsqcup_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\right)$. By the relation $\Delta_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}=J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}\left(\eta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{(1 / 2)-\left(1 / p^{\prime}\right)}\right.$, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\langle J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) \zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{\left(\eta_{2}\right)} & =\left(J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}} \Delta_{\left.\eta_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right)}\right.  \tag{11.4}\\
& =\left(J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} \zeta^{\prime}, \Delta_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)} \zeta\right) \\
& =\left(J_{p^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}\right) \zeta^{\prime}, \zeta\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

By Lemma 11.1 and the formula (1.6) proved in Lemma 10.5 , we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) \zeta\right\|_{p}^{\left(\eta_{2}\right)}=\|\zeta\|_{p}^{\left(\eta_{1}\right)} \tag{11.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $\zeta \in D\left(\Lambda_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\right)$, which is a dense subset of $H$, hence dense in $H$ relative to $\|\cdot\|_{p}^{\left(\eta_{1}\right)}$ due to Lemma 6.1 (2) and therefore dense in $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ due to the density of $H$ proved in Lemma 10.4. Since $J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ is conjugate linear on $D\left(\Delta_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\right)$, this proves the first assertion of Lemma. At the same time, (11.4) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) \zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{\left(\eta_{2}\right)}=\left\langle J_{p^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}\right) \zeta^{\prime}, \zeta\right\rangle_{\left(\eta_{1}\right)} \tag{11.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $\zeta \in L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ and $\zeta^{\prime} \in L_{p^{\prime}}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$ and hence the last assertion of Lemma.

Let $1<p \leqq 2, A=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ and $B=v \Delta_{\psi, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p^{\prime} \in L_{p^{\prime}}}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$. By (11.6) and Lemma 11.1, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\langle J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)\right. & A, B\rangle_{\left(\eta_{2}\right)}=\left\langle v^{*} \Delta_{\psi_{v}, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p_{1}^{\prime}}, A\right\rangle_{\left(\eta_{1}\right)}  \tag{11.7}\\
= & \omega_{\eta_{1}}\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} u^{*} v^{*} \Delta_{\psi_{v, \eta_{1}}^{1 / 2}}^{1 / 2}\right)=\omega_{\eta_{2}}\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p} u^{*} v^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{v}, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p}\right) \\
= & \omega_{\eta_{2}}\left(u^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{u}, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p} 1 \Delta_{\psi, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p^{\prime}} v^{*}\right)=\omega_{\eta_{2}}\left(\Delta_{\psi, v_{2}}^{1 / p^{\prime}} v^{*} u^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{u}, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p}\right) \\
= & \left\langle u^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{u, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p},}^{1 / p} B\right\rangle_{\left(\eta_{2}\right)}
\end{align*}
$$

where the third equality is due to Lemma $A$ (vii), the fourth equality utilizes $u^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{4}, \eta_{2}}^{\alpha}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta_{2}}^{\alpha} u^{*}$ and $v^{*} \Delta_{\psi_{v}, \eta_{1}}^{\alpha}=\Delta_{\psi, \eta_{1}}^{\alpha} v^{*}$ in the definition (1.22) and (1.26) of $\omega_{\eta}$ and the fifth equality is due to (1.27). This proves $J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}\right.$, $\left.\eta_{1}\right) A=u^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{u}, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p}$ for $1<p \leqq 2$.

Let $p=1, A=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ and $B=x \eta_{2} \in L_{\infty}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$ with $x \in M$.

The same computation as (11.7) shows

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) A, B\right\rangle_{\left(\eta_{2}\right)}=\left\langle u^{*} \Delta_{\varphi_{u}, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p}, B\right\rangle_{\left(\eta_{p}\right)} \tag{11.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

and hence $J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) A=u^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{u}, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p}$.

Remark 11.3. If $\eta_{1}=\eta_{2}$, this mapping $J_{p}(\eta, \eta)$ corresponds to the complex conjugation in the commutative case and to the adjoint * in the case of $L_{p}$ spaces defined by trace. By the explicit description of the map $J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ given in Lemmas 11.1 and 11.2 , we see that $J_{p}\left(\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}\right)$ $=J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)^{-1}$ and $J_{p}(\eta, \eta)^{2}=1$.

Lemma 11.4. If $\zeta \in D\left(\Lambda_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-(1 / p)}\right) \quad(1 \leqq p \leqq 2)$ or $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ $(2 \leqq p \leqq \infty)$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{p}(\eta, \eta) \zeta=J_{1 /(2 p)}^{(\eta)} \zeta \tag{11.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $J_{\alpha}^{(n)}$ is defined by (3.1).

Proof. For $p \neq \infty, \zeta=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta\left(\eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}\right)\right)$ by Lemmas 10.1 (2) and 10.3 for $1 \leqq p \leqq 2$ and by Lemma 4.1 (1) for $2 \leqq p<\infty$. Then Lemma C. 2 implies (11.9) due to an explicit description for $J_{p}(\eta, \eta) \zeta$ given by Lemmas 11.1 and 11.2. For $p=\infty, \zeta=x \eta$ with $x \in M$ and $J_{0}^{(\eta)} \zeta=J \Delta_{\eta}^{1 / 2} x \eta$ $x^{*} \eta=J_{\infty}(\eta, \eta) \zeta$ (see Lemma 11.1).

We define $\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ by (1.9).

## Lemma 11.5.

(1) $\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ is an isomorphism of $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ onto $L_{p}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$ and is independent of $\eta$.
(2) $\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{3}, \eta_{2}\right) \tau_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)=\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{3}, \eta_{1}\right)$, where $\eta_{j}(j=1, \cdots, 3)$ are any cyclic and separating vectors.
(3) Let $1 \leqq p<\infty . \quad \zeta=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1, p} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$. Then $\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) \zeta=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p}$ $\in \mathcal{L}_{p}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$.
(4) Let $\zeta=x \eta_{1} \in L_{\infty}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$. Then $\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right) \zeta=x \eta_{2}$.

Proof. By Lemmas 11.1 and 11.2, $J_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ maps $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M$, $\eta_{1}$ ) onto $u^{*} \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$ for $1 \leqq p<\infty$ and $x \eta_{1} \in L_{\infty}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ onto $x^{*} \eta_{2}$
$\in L_{\infty}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$ for $p=\infty$. Hence $\tau_{p}\left(\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}\right)$ maps $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta_{1}}^{1 / p} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ onto $u u_{\phi, \eta_{2}}^{1 / p} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$ for $1 \leqq p<\infty$ and $x \eta_{1} \in L_{\infty}\left(M, \eta_{1}\right)$ onto $x \eta_{2} \in L_{\infty}\left(M, \eta_{2}\right)$. Hence the assertions follow.

## § 12. Product and Hölder Inequality

Let us recall Notation 7.6 for $\mathcal{L}_{p, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)(1 \leqq p \leqq \infty)$, adjoint and product. By Lemma 7.3, we may identify elements of $\mathcal{L}_{p, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$ (modulo induced equivalence) with elements of $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ (directly for $2 \leqq p^{\prime} \leqq \infty$, through duality $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)=L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ for $1<p^{\prime} \leqq 2$ and through $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta) \subset L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ together with ${ }^{*}$-strong continuity on bounded sets in Lemma $\mathrm{A}(\mathrm{vi})$ for $p^{\prime}=1$.

Lemma 12.1. Let $1 \leqq p, q, r \leqq \infty, p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=q^{-1}+\left(q^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=r^{-1}$ $+\left(r^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1, p^{-1}+q^{-1}=r^{-1}$.
(1) If $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ in $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$ are equal as elements of $L_{p}(M$, $\eta$ ), then $A_{1}^{*}=A_{2}^{*}$ in $L_{p}(M, \eta), A_{1} B=A_{2} B$ and $B A_{1}=B A_{2}$ in $L_{r}(M, \eta)$ where $B \in \mathcal{L}_{q^{\prime}, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$.
(2) $A^{*}$ is conjugate linear in $A$ and $A B$ is bilinear in $(A, B)$.
(3) The product is associative and $(A B)^{*}=B^{*} A^{*}$.
(4) $\|A B\|_{r}^{(\eta)} \leqq\|A\|_{p}^{(7)}\|B\|_{q}^{(7)}$.

Proof. Viewing $\beta \in \boldsymbol{C}$ as an element of $\mathcal{L}_{1,0}^{*}(M, \eta)$, it is easy to check $(\beta A)^{*}=\bar{\beta} A^{*}, \quad(\beta A) C=A(\beta C)=\beta A C$ and the equivalence of $A_{1}=A_{2}$ with $A_{1}+(-1) A_{2}=0$ in $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ form the definition and linear dependence of $\omega_{\eta}$ on $x$ 's. (Lemma A (v).) Therefore Lemma 7.7 (2) implies (1) as well as (2). (3) follows directly from the definition. To prove (4), we may restrict $A \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ and $B \in \mathcal{L}_{q}(M, \eta)$ due to (1) because $\mathcal{L}_{s}(M, \eta)$ is a subset of $\mathcal{L}_{s^{\prime}}^{*}(M, \eta)$ on one hand and $\mathcal{L}_{s}(M, \eta)$ $=L_{s}(M, \eta)$ on the other where $s=p$ or $q$. Then (4) follows from

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\langle A B, C\rangle_{(\eta)}\right|=\left|\omega_{\eta}\left(C^{*} A B\right)\right| \leqq\|A\|_{p}^{(\eta)}\|B\|_{q}^{(\eta)}\|C\|_{r^{(,)}}^{\left.()^{\prime}\right)} \tag{12.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $C \in \mathcal{L}_{r^{\prime}}(M, \eta)=L_{r^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ due to Lemma A (iii), $\left\|u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}\right\|_{p}^{(\eta)}=\phi(1)^{1 / p}$ (proven in Lemmas 4.1 (i) for $2 \leqq p<\infty$, in Lemmas 7.4 and 10.4 for $1<p \leqq 2$ and Remark 5.7 for $p=1$ ) and $\|x \eta\|_{\infty}^{(n)}=\|x\|$ (Lemma 5.1).

Remark 12.2. $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ is in $\mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}, 0}^{*}(M, \eta)$ and $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ exhausts $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for $1 \leqq p<\infty$ while $\mathcal{L}_{1,0}^{*}(M, \eta)$ exhausts $L_{\infty}(M, \eta)$ under the above identification. Hence the adjoint is defined as a conjugate linear involution in $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ and product is defined as a bilinear map from $L_{p}(M, \eta) \otimes L_{q}(M, \eta)$ into $L_{r}(M, \eta)$. In particular the adjoint coincides with the map $J_{p}(\eta, \eta)$ as is seen explicitly on $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ for $1 \leqq p<\infty$ and on $\mathcal{L}_{1,0}^{*}(M, \eta)$ for $p=\infty$ due to Lemmas 11.1 and 11.2.

Lemma 12.3. The multiplication of $x \in M=\mathcal{L}_{1,0}^{*}(M, \eta)$ with $B \in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}^{*}(M, \eta)$ makes $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ an $M$-module $\left(p^{-1}+\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}=1\right)$. If there exists $\Psi \in H$ coinciding with $B$ as an element of $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ $\left(=L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}\right)$, then $x B$ coincides with $x \Psi$ as a multiplication of $x \in M$ on a vector $\Psi$ in $H$.

Proof. The special case of Lemma 12.1 shows that $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is an $M$-module. For $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty, \Psi=B \eta$ and $x B$ coincides with $x \Psi=x B \eta$ by definition. Let $1 \leqq p<2$ and $A \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ coincide with $\Psi$ as an element of $L_{p}(M, \eta)$. (Lemma 10.1 (1).) By Lemma 10.3, $\eta \in D(A)$ and $\Psi$ $=A \eta$. Then $\eta \in D(x A)$ and hence $x A$ coincides with $(x A) \eta=x \Psi$ (product in $H$ ) by (2.5). Since $x B=x A$ in $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ by Lemma 12.1, $x B$ coincides with $x \Psi$ in $L_{p}(M, \eta)$.

Remark 12.4. Even if there exists $\Psi \in H$ coinciding with $B$ $\in \mathcal{L}_{p^{\prime}}^{*}(M, \eta), \eta$ is not necessarily in the domain of $B$ in contrast to Lemma 10. 3.

## § 13. Linear Polar Decomposition

Lemma 13.1. Let $\zeta \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ such that $J_{p}(\eta, \eta) \zeta=\zeta$. Then there exists $\zeta_{+} \geqq 0$ and $\zeta_{-} \geqq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta=\zeta_{+}-\zeta_{-} \tag{13.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

This decomposition is unique under the condition,

$$
\begin{equation*}
s^{M}\left(\zeta_{+}\right) \perp s^{M}\left(\zeta_{-}\right) \tag{13.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $s^{M}(\zeta)$ is the smallest projection $P \in M$ satisfying $P \zeta=\zeta$ in the

M-module $L_{p}(M, \eta)$.

Proof. As is noticed in Remark $12.2 J_{p}(\eta, \eta)$ maps $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ to $\zeta^{*}$, i.e. $\zeta=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}, u^{*}=u, s(\phi)=u^{2}$ and $\phi_{u}=\phi$ (equivalently $u d_{\phi, \eta}^{\alpha}=\Lambda_{\phi, \eta}^{\alpha} u$ ) for $p \neq \infty$ and $\zeta=x \eta, x^{*}=x$ for $p=\infty$. For $p=\infty$, the unique decomposition $x=x_{+}-x_{-}, x_{ \pm} \in M_{+}$implies the existence of decomposition as well as the uniqueness because $\eta$ is separating for $M$.

In the case $p \neq \infty$, let $E_{ \pm}$be the spectral projection of $u$ for $\pm 1$ and $\phi_{ \pm} \equiv \phi \circ E_{ \pm}$. Then $E_{+}+E_{-}=s(\phi), s\left(\Delta_{\phi_{ \pm}, \eta}\right)=s\left(\phi_{ \pm}\right)=E_{ \pm}$and $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}=\Delta_{\phi+, \eta}$ $+\Delta_{\phi-\eta}$. Hence

$$
\begin{align*}
\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \pm u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} & =(1 \pm u) \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}  \tag{13.3}\\
& =2 E_{ \pm} \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \\
& =2 \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} .
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}-\Delta_{\phi,, \eta}^{1 / p}, \tag{13.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

which proves the existence of the decomposition.
To prove the uniqueness of the decomposition for $p \neq \infty$, we assume $\zeta=\zeta_{+}^{\prime}-\zeta_{-}^{\prime}, \quad \zeta_{ \pm}^{\prime} \in L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)$ be another such decomposition satisfying $s^{M}\left(\zeta_{+}^{\prime}\right) \perp s^{M}\left(\zeta_{-}^{\prime}\right)$. By Lemma $4.3(2 \leqq p<\infty)$, Lemma $10.6(1<p \leqq 2)$, Lemma 5.4 and Remark $5.7 \quad(p=1)$, $\zeta_{ \pm}^{\prime}=\Delta_{\phi_{ \pm}^{\prime}, \eta}^{1 / p}$ for some $\phi_{ \pm}^{\prime} \in M_{*}^{+}$satisfying $s^{M}\left(\zeta_{ \pm}^{\prime}\right)=s\left(\phi_{ \pm}^{\prime}\right)$. If we define a partial isometry $u^{\prime}$ such that $u^{\prime}$ is 1 on $s^{M}\left(\zeta_{+}^{\prime}\right),-1$ on $s^{M}\left(\zeta_{-}^{\prime}\right)$ and 0 on their orthogonal complement, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
u^{\prime} \zeta^{\prime}=\zeta_{+}^{\prime}-\zeta_{-}^{\prime}=\zeta, s^{M}\left(\zeta^{\prime}\right)=\left(u^{\prime}\right)^{2} \tag{11.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\zeta^{\prime}=\zeta_{+}^{\prime}+\zeta_{-}^{\prime}=\Delta_{\phi_{-}+\phi_{-}^{\prime}, \eta}^{1 / p}$. By the uniqueness of the polar decomposition, $u^{\prime}=u$ and $\zeta^{\prime}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}$. This means $E_{ \pm} \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}=\Delta_{\phi-{ }^{\prime}, \eta}^{1 / p}$. This shows $\zeta_{ \pm}^{\prime}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}$ and the uniqueness of the decomposition follows.

Corollary 13.2. Any $\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)(1 \leqq p \leqq \infty)$ has a unique decomposition $\zeta=\left(\zeta_{r+}-\zeta_{r-}\right)+i\left(\zeta_{i_{+}}-\zeta_{i-}\right)$ such that $\zeta_{r \sigma} \in L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta)$ and $s^{M}\left(\zeta_{\tau+}\right) \perp s^{M}\left(\zeta_{\tau-}\right)$ where $\tau=r, i$ and $\sigma=+,-$

Proof. Relative to the conjugate linear involutive isometry $J_{p}(\eta, \eta)$,
$\zeta \in L_{p}(M, \eta)$ has a unique decomposition

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta=(\operatorname{Re} \zeta)+i(\operatorname{Im} \zeta) \tag{13.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Re} \zeta=\left(\zeta+J_{p}(\eta, \eta) \zeta\right) / 2, \operatorname{Im} \zeta=\left(\zeta-J_{p}(\eta, \eta) \zeta\right) /(2 i) \tag{13.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\operatorname{Re} \zeta$ and $\operatorname{Im} \zeta$ are uniquely determined by their $J_{p}(\eta, \eta)$-invariance and (13.6). By applying Lemma 13.1 to $\operatorname{Re} \zeta$ and $\operatorname{Im} \zeta$, we obtain Corollary.

Lemma 13.3. Any $\zeta \in D\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}\right)(0 \leqq \alpha \leqq 1 / 2)$ has a decomposition

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta=\zeta_{r+}-\zeta_{r-}+i\left(\zeta_{i+}-\zeta_{i-}\right) \tag{13.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

such that $\zeta_{\tau \sigma} \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha}(\tau=r, i, \sigma= \pm)$. This decomposition is unique if we impose the following condition.

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
s^{M}\left(\zeta_{\tau_{+}}\right) \perp s^{M}\left(\zeta_{\tau-}\right) & \text { if } & \alpha \geqq 1 / 4 \\
s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\zeta_{\tau+}\right) \perp s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\zeta_{\tau-}\right) & \text { if } & \alpha \leqq 1 / 4 \tag{13.10}
\end{array}
$$

Proof. First consider the case $1 / 2 \geqq \alpha \geqq 1 / 4$ and let $\zeta \in D\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}\right)$. By Lemmas 6.4 and 10.1 (2), we may apply the proof of decomposition in Lemma $13.1 \zeta \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)=L_{p}(M, \eta)$ for $p=(2 \alpha)^{-1}$. Since $J_{p}(\eta, \eta)$ coincides with $J_{1 /(2 p)}^{(\eta)}=J_{\alpha}^{(\eta)}$ on $D\left(\Lambda_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}\right)$ by Lemma 11.4, and since the range of $J_{\alpha}^{(\eta)}$ is again in $D\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}\right)\left(J_{\alpha}^{(\eta)}=J_{\eta}^{2 \alpha-(1 / 2)} J_{\eta}\right)$, both $\operatorname{Re} \zeta$ and $\operatorname{Im} \zeta$ are in $D\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}\right)$. If $\zeta \in D\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}\right)$ is $J_{\alpha}^{(1)}$-invariant, then $\zeta=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta$ with $\eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}\right)$ by Lemmas 10.1 (2) and 10.3 and $u^{*}=u, \phi_{u}=\phi$ as in the proof of Lemma 13.1. In the same proof, $\Delta_{\phi_{ \pm}, \eta}^{1 / p}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} s\left(\phi_{ \pm}\right) \supset s\left(\phi_{ \pm}\right) \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}$ and hence $\eta \in D\left(\Lambda_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p}\right)$. Therefore $\zeta_{\text {r士 }}$ in Lemma 13.1 belongs to $V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$. The uniqueness of the decomposition is a special case of Lemma 13.1.

Next consider the case $1 / 4 \geqq \alpha \geqq 0$. If $\zeta \in D\left(\Delta_{\eta}^{(1 / 2)-2 \alpha}\right)$, then $J \zeta \in D$ ( $\Delta_{\eta}^{2 \alpha-(1 / 2)}$ ) due to $J \Delta_{\eta}=\Delta_{\eta}^{-1} J$. We can apply the above proof for $\alpha^{\prime}$ $=(1 / 2)-\alpha\left(2 \alpha-(1 / 2)=(1 / 2)-2 \alpha^{\prime}\right)$ and obtain a decomposition

$$
\begin{equation*}
J \zeta=\zeta_{r+}^{\prime}-\zeta_{r_{-}}^{\prime}+i\left(\zeta_{i_{+}-}^{\prime}-\zeta_{i_{-}}^{\prime}\right) \tag{13.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $s^{M}\left(\zeta_{\tau_{+}}^{\prime}\right) \perp s^{M}\left(\zeta_{\tau_{-}}^{\prime}\right)$. Therefore we obtain the decomposition (13.8) satisfying (13.10) with $\zeta_{\tau \sigma}=J \zeta_{\text {ro }}^{\prime}$ due to $J V_{\eta}^{\alpha^{\prime}}=V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ (Theorem 3 (4) in [2]) and $s^{M^{\prime}}(J \xi)=j\left(s^{M}(\xi)\right)$. Conversely, the decomposition (13.8)
satisfying (13.10) implies the decomposition (13.11) satisfying $s^{M}\left(\zeta_{\tau_{+}}^{\prime}\right) \perp s^{M}\left(\zeta_{\tau-}^{\prime}\right)$ with $\zeta_{\tau \sigma}^{\prime}=J \zeta_{\tau \sigma}$ and hence the uniqueness of decomposition for the present case follows from the same for the first case.

## § 14. Proof of Theorems

Theorem 1. (1) For $2 \leqq p \leqq \infty, L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is a Banach space by Lemma 6.1 (3) and is an $M$-module by Lemma 4.4. For $1 \leqq p<2,\|\cdot\|_{p}^{(n)}$ is a norm by Lemma 10.5 and $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is a Banach space by definition. In either case $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is an $M$-module by Lemma 12.3.
(2) and (3): $\left\langle\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}$ is a continuous sesquilinear form on $L_{p}(M$, $\eta) \times L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)$ for $p^{-1}+p^{\prime-1}=1$ satisfying (1.6) by Lemmas 10.4 and 10.5 for $1<p<\infty$ and by (5.12), Lemma 5.1 and Lemma 5.4 for $p$ $=1$ or $\infty$. It coincides with $\left(\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right)$ in $H$ whenever $\zeta$ and $\zeta^{\prime}$ are in $H$ by Lemma 10.4 for $1<p<\infty$ and by Remark 5.7 for $p=1$ or $\infty$. Since $H \cap L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is either whole $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ or a dense subset (Lemma 10.5), $\left\langle\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right\rangle_{(\eta)}$ can be obtained as the unique continuous extension of $\left(\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right)$. By Corollary 8.3, $L_{p}(M, \eta)$ is reflexive for $2 \leqq p<\infty$ and by Lemma 10.5 $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)=L_{p}(M, \eta)^{*}$ for $2 \leqq p<\infty$ and $\left(p^{\prime}\right)^{-1}+p^{-1}=1$. By Lemmas 5.1 and 5.4, $L_{1}(M, \eta)^{*}=\left(M_{*}\right)^{*}=M=L_{\infty}(M, \eta)$.
(4) By Lemma 8.1.

Theorem 2. By Lemmas 11.1, 11.2 and 11.5 where (1.9) is used as a definition.

Theorem 3. (1) (3) and (4): By Lemmas 4.1 (1), 4.3 and 3.5 for $2 \leqq p<\infty$, Lemmas $10.1,10.5$ and 10.6 for $1<p \leqq 2$, by Lemma 5.1, Lemma 5.2 and polar decomposition of $x \in M$ for $p=\infty$ and by Lemma 5.5 and Remark 5.7 for $p=1$. Note that (1.18) is given by (1.22).
(2) By Lemmas 11.1 and 11.2.

Theorem 4. By Lemmas 5.1 and 5. 4.

Lemma A. Proved in Appendix A.

Theorem 5. By Lemma 12.1. (Note that (1.30) is obtained by repeated application of Lemma 12.1 (4) and the equality $\|x\|=\|x\|_{\infty}^{(n)}$ for $x \in \mathcal{L}_{1,0}^{*}(M, \eta)$.

Theorem 6. By Corollary 13.2.

Theorem 7. (1) The first half is by Lemmas 3.5 and 3.6 , except for $|T| \eta \in V_{\eta}^{0}$ for $T$ affiliated with $M$, which follows from the duality of $V_{\eta}^{1 / 2}$ and $V_{\eta}^{0}$ along with $\left(y^{*} y \eta,|T| \eta\right)=(y \eta,|T| y \eta) \geqq 0$ for $y \in M^{\prime}$. For the second half, we use $J \zeta \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha^{\prime}}$ if $\alpha^{\prime}+\alpha=1 / 2$ and $\zeta \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ (Theorem 3 (4) of [2]) and apply the first half to $J \zeta$ to obtain $J \zeta=u|J \zeta|_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ and hence $\zeta=u^{\prime}|\zeta|^{\prime}{ }_{\alpha}$ with $u^{\prime}=j(u) \in M^{\prime},|\zeta|^{\prime}{ }_{\alpha}=J|J \zeta|_{\alpha^{\prime}} \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ and $u^{\prime} u^{\prime *}$ $=j\left(u \imath^{*}\right)=j\left(s^{M}(J \zeta)\right)=s^{M I^{\prime}}(\zeta)$.
(2) The first half follows from polar decomposition $\zeta=u|\zeta|_{\alpha}$ in $L_{1 /(2 \alpha)}(M, \eta)$, which implies $|\zeta|_{\alpha}=u^{*} \zeta$ due to $u^{*} u=s^{M}\left(|\zeta|_{\alpha}\right)$, and therefore $|\zeta|_{\alpha} \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ due to $\zeta \in H$, Lemma 12.3 (hence $|\zeta|_{\alpha} \in H$ ) and Theorem 1 (5). The second half is obtained by applying the first half to $J \zeta$ to obtain $J \zeta=u|J \zeta|_{\alpha}\left(\alpha=(1 / 2)-\alpha^{\prime}\right)$ and hence $\zeta=u^{\prime}|\zeta|_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ as in (1).
(3) Any $\zeta \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha} \subset L_{p}^{+}(M, \eta) \quad\left(p=(2 \alpha)^{-1}\right)$ is of the form $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta$ for a $\phi \in M_{*}^{+}$by Lemmas 10.6 and 10.3. If $\zeta \in V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ is of the form $\zeta=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \eta$, then $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / p} \in \mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ coincides with $\zeta$ (in $L_{p^{\prime}}(M, \eta)^{*}$ ) by Lemma 2.2, hence the uniqueness of $\phi$ for a given $\zeta$.
(4) By Lemma 13.3.

Corollary. Any $\phi \in M_{*}^{+}$has a vector representative $\zeta \in H$, to which we apply the second half of Theorem 7 (2) to obtain $\zeta=u^{\prime}|\zeta|_{\alpha}$ with $|\zeta|_{a}$ $\in V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ for any $0 \leqq \alpha \leqq 1 / 4$. Since $u^{\prime *} u^{\prime}|\zeta|_{\alpha}=|\zeta|_{\alpha}$, the vector states by $|\zeta|_{\alpha}$ and by $\zeta$ is the same and are $\phi$. Conversely, any two representative $\zeta_{1}$ and $\zeta_{2}$ of the same $\phi$ are related by $\zeta_{1}=u^{\prime} \zeta_{2}$ where $u^{\prime}$ is a partial isometry in $M^{\prime}$ satisfying $u^{\prime} u^{\prime *}=s^{n \prime \prime}\left(\zeta_{1}\right), u^{\prime *} u^{\prime}=s^{n \prime}\left(\zeta_{2}\right)$. Hence by the uniqueness of polar decomposition in Theorem 7 (2), we obtain the uniqueness if $\zeta_{1}$ and $\zeta_{2}$ are in $V_{\eta}^{a}$.

## $\S$ 15. Discussion

The $L_{p}$-space $L_{p}(M)$ of Haagerup ([18]) is defined as: the set of
all $\tau$-measurable operator $\widetilde{T}$ affiliated with $N$ satisfying $\theta_{t}(\widetilde{T})=e^{-t / p} \widetilde{T}$, where $N=M \times{ }_{\sigma} \boldsymbol{R}$ is the crossed product of $M$ with the modular action $\sigma_{t}$ of $\boldsymbol{R}$ induced by $\omega_{\eta}, \theta_{t}$ is the dual action, and $\tau$ is the canonical trace on $N$. The spatial $L_{p}$-spaces of Hilsum $L_{p}\left(M, \omega_{\eta}(J \cdot J)\right.$ ) (see [12]) consists of operators $T=u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{p / 1}$ with the norm $\|T\|=\phi(1)^{1 / p}$. Our $\mathcal{L}_{p}(M, \eta)$ is seen to be the same as $L_{p}\left(M, \omega_{\eta}(J \cdot J)\right)$.

We note that Hilsum's theory uses the $L_{p}$-spaces of Haagerup through an isomorphism and Haagerup's construction of $L_{p}$-spaces goes through the crossed product of $M$ with the modular action. In contrast, our construction is directly on the Hilbert space $H$ (without using trace anywhere) and reveals a close relation between the positive part of $L_{p}$-spaces and the positive cones $V_{\eta}^{\alpha}$ associated with the von Neumann algebra $M$. Another advantage of our method is that the linear structure of $L_{p}$-spaces is clear from its construction in contrast to the discussion of Hilsum where it is discovered by finding an isomorphism with the $L_{p}$-spaces of Haagerup. Our discussion of positive cones is closely related to recent results of Kosaki [16], [17].

## Appendix A. $\boldsymbol{N}$ point Analytic Function

In this section we give the proof of Lemma A in Section 1.

Lemma A. 1. Let $\phi_{j} \in M_{*}^{+}$and $x_{j} \in M(j=0, \cdots, n)$. Let $\xi=\xi\left(\phi_{0}\right)$ be the representative vector of $\phi_{0}$ (in $\mathscr{P}_{\eta}{ }_{\eta}$ ). Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta(z)=x_{0} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \xi}^{z_{1}} \cdots x_{n-1} \Delta_{\phi_{n, \xi}}^{z_{n}, x_{n}} x_{n} \xi \tag{A.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

is defined for $z=\left(z_{1}, \cdots, z_{n}\right) \in I_{1 / 2}^{(n)}$ (in the sense that $\xi$ is in the domain of the product of operators in front), holomorphic in the interior of $I_{1 / 2}^{(n)}$ and strongly continuous on $I_{1 / 2}^{(n)}$ with the bound

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\zeta(z)\| \leqq\left(\prod_{j=0}^{n}\left\|x_{j}\right\|\left\|\phi_{j}\right\|^{\mathrm{Re} z_{j}}\right) \tag{A.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left\|\phi_{j}\right\|=\phi_{j}(1),\left\|\phi_{0}\right\|=\|\xi\|^{2}, z_{0} \equiv(1 / 2)-\sum_{j=1}^{n} z_{j}$ and $I_{a}^{(n)}$ is defined by (1.21) where 1 is to be replaced by $a \geqq 0$.

Proof. The tube domain $I_{a}^{(n)}$ has the following distinguished bound-
aries corresponding to extremal points of its base:
(A. 3)
(A.4) $\quad \partial_{k} I_{a}^{(n)}=\left\{z: \operatorname{Re} z_{j}=0(j \neq k), \operatorname{Re} z_{k}=a\right\}, k=1, \cdots, n$.

The expression (A.1) is well-defined and (A.2) holds on $\partial_{0} I_{a}^{(n)}$ obviously and on $\partial_{k} I_{a}^{(n)}(k=1, \cdots, n)$ due to the following formulas:
(A. 5) $\quad \zeta(z)=x_{0} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \xi}^{i t_{1}} \cdots x_{k-1} \zeta_{k}$,
(A. 6) $\quad \zeta_{k}=\Delta_{\phi_{k},}^{1 / 2} y_{k} \xi=J s^{M}(\xi) y_{k}^{*} \xi\left(\phi_{k}\right)$,
(A. 7) $\quad y_{k}=u_{k} \sigma_{t_{k}}^{\eta}\left(x_{k} u_{k+1} \cdots u_{n-1} \sigma_{t_{n-1}}^{\eta}\left(x_{n-1} u_{n} \sigma_{t_{n}}^{\eta}\left(x_{n}\right)\right) \cdots\right) w_{k}$,
(A. 8a) $\quad \Delta_{\phi_{j}, \xi}^{i t_{j}} \Delta_{\eta, \xi}^{-i t_{j}}=u_{j} s^{M^{\prime}}(\xi), u_{j}=\left(D \phi_{j}: D \eta\right)_{t_{j}} \in M$,
(A. 8 b$) \quad \Delta_{\eta, \xi}^{i t} x \Delta_{\eta, \xi}^{-i t}=\sigma_{t}^{\eta}(x) s^{M^{\prime}}(\xi) \quad(x \in M)$,
(A. 8c) $\quad w_{k}=(D \eta: D \xi)_{t}, t=t_{k}+\cdots+t_{n}$,
(A. 9) $\quad\left(\Delta_{\phi_{k} ;}^{i t_{k}} \Delta_{\eta, \xi}^{-i t_{k}}\right) \Delta_{\eta, \xi}^{i t_{k}}\left(x_{k} \cdots\left(x_{n-1}\left(\Delta_{\phi_{n, \xi}}^{i t_{n}} \Delta_{\eta, \xi}^{-i t_{n}}\right)\right.\right.$

$$
\left.\left.\Delta_{\eta, \xi}^{i t \tau_{n}} x_{n} \Delta_{\eta, \xi}^{-i t t_{n}}\right) \cdots\right) \Delta_{\eta, \xi}^{-i t_{k}}\left(\Delta_{\eta, \xi}^{i t} \Delta_{\xi, \xi}^{-i t}\right)
$$

$$
=y_{k} s^{M^{\prime}}(\xi) .
$$

Here $\eta$ is any faithful normal semifinite weight, $\sigma_{t}^{\eta}$ is its modular automorphism, the formula (A.6) is due to (C. 1, 3, 4 and 12), the formula (A.8a) due to (C.5), the formula (A.8b) due to Theorem C1 ( $\beta 1$ ), $\xi\left(\phi_{k}\right)$ is the unique vector representative of $\phi_{k}$ in $\mathscr{L}_{\eta}$ and the rest is a straightforward computation.

Therefore, if the expression (A.1) is defined for $z \in I_{1 / 2}^{(n)}$, holomorphic in the interior of $I_{1 / 2}^{(n)}$ and weakly continuous on $I_{1 / 2}^{(n)}$, then (A.2) follows by the generalized three line theorem for several complex variables (Theorem 2.1 in [3]) applied to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\zeta(z)\|=\sup \left\{\left|\left(\zeta, \zeta_{1}\right)\right|:\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\| \leqq 1\right\} \tag{A.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

To show that $\xi$ is in the domain of the operator in (A.1) as well as holomorphy and weak continuity, we use mathematical induction on $n$. The case $n=1$ is known due to $x \xi \in D\left(\Delta_{\phi, \xi}^{1 / 2}\right)$. Assume the assertion for $n$. Let $z=\left(w, z_{1}, \cdots, z_{n}\right)$ be in $I_{1 / 2}^{(n+1)}, \phi \in M_{*}^{+}$and $\zeta_{1} \in D\left(\Delta_{\phi, \xi}^{11 / 2}\right)$. We consider the function

$$
\begin{equation*}
G(z)=\left(x_{0} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \xi}^{z_{1}} \cdots \Delta_{\phi_{n}, \xi}^{z_{n}} x_{n} \xi, \Delta_{\phi, \xi}^{\bar{u}} \xi_{1}\right), \tag{A.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is holomorphic in the interior of $I_{1 / 2}^{(n+1)}$ and continuous on $I_{1 / 2}^{(n+1)}$
 assumption) with the bound

$$
\begin{equation*}
|G(\approx)| \leqq\left\|\zeta_{1}\right\|\left\|x_{0}\right\|\|\phi\|^{\operatorname{Re} w}\left\|\phi_{0}\right\|^{\operatorname{Re} z_{0}-\operatorname{Re} w} \prod_{j=1}^{n}\left(\left\|x_{j}\right\|\left\|\phi_{j}\right\|^{\operatorname{Re} z_{j}}\right) \tag{A.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

due to the generalized three line theorem and estimates at distinguished boundaries similar to (A.5) and (A.6). Hence $G(z)$ is a continuous conjugate linear functional of $\zeta_{1}$ and there exists $\widetilde{\zeta} \in H$ such that $G(z)$ $=\left(\widetilde{\zeta}, \zeta_{1}\right)$. Hence $\zeta(z)$ is in the domain of $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{w}$ (hence of $x \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{w}$ for $x \in M)$ if $\left(w, z_{1}, \cdots, z_{n}\right)$ is in $I_{1 / 2}^{(n+1)}$. Due to the uniform bound on $\widetilde{\zeta}=\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{w} \zeta(z)$ given by (A.12), this also shows holomorphy of $\widetilde{\zeta}$ as a function of ( $w, z_{1}, \cdots, z_{n}$ ) in the interior of $I_{1 / 2}^{(n+1)}$ as well as weak continuity on $I_{1 / 2}^{(n+1)}$.

The strong continuity can be proved again by induction on $n$. Step from $n$ to $n+1$ is as follows. We use the formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\phi, \xi}^{(1 / 2)-\Sigma z_{j} \zeta}=J_{\phi, \xi}^{*} x_{n}^{*} \Delta_{\phi n, \xi(\phi)}^{i_{n} \tilde{z}_{n}} \cdots x_{1}^{*} \Delta_{\phi, 5, \xi(\phi)}^{\bar{z}_{1}} x^{*} \xi(\phi), \tag{A.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta=x \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \xi}^{z_{1}} x_{1} \cdots \Delta_{\phi_{n, \xi}}^{z_{n}, \xi_{n}} x_{n} \xi, \tag{A.13a}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is obtained for pure imaginary $z$ 's from the formula (A.6) (with an appropriate change of notation such as $\phi_{k} \rightarrow \phi, k+1 \rightarrow 1, t \rightarrow 0, w_{k} \rightarrow 1$, $t_{k} \rightarrow t=-\sum t_{j}$, and $u_{k} \rightarrow u=(D \phi: D \eta)_{t}$ ) by using the first formula of (A. 8a) and the formula (A.8b) (both depending on $\xi$ only through $s^{M \prime^{\prime}}(\xi)$ ) with a change $\xi \rightarrow \xi(\phi)$ for replacing $\sigma_{t_{j}}^{\eta}(\cdot) u_{j}^{*} s^{M^{\prime}}(\xi(\phi))$ in $y^{*}$ by
 $=\hat{\xi}(\phi)$ and commutativity of $s^{M^{\prime}}(\xi(\phi))$ with $x_{l} \in M$ and $\Delta_{\phi_{l}, \xi(\phi)}^{-i t_{l}}$ and for a similar replacement of $\sigma_{t}^{\eta}(\cdot) u^{*}$, and hence holds for $z \in I_{1 / 2}^{(n)}$ by analytic continuation and weak continuity (with a help of edge of wedge theorem as applied to the difference of two sides compared with analytic function $0)$. For $0 \leqq \operatorname{Re} z_{0} \leqq(1 / 2)-\operatorname{Re} \sum z_{j} \equiv w_{0}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\phi, \xi}^{z_{0}, \zeta}=\left\{\Delta_{\phi, \xi}^{z_{0}, \xi}\left(1+\Delta_{\phi, \xi}^{w_{0}^{0}}\right)^{-1}\right\}\left(1+\Delta_{\phi, \xi}^{w_{0}}\right) \zeta \tag{A.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\zeta$ given by (A.13a). The first factor on the right hand side is strongly continuous with norm $\leqq 1$ and the rest is strongly continuous by inductive assumption and (A.13). Therefore we have strong continuity for $n$.

Lemma $\tilde{\mathbf{A}}$. For the sake of convenience in the proof, we replace $\eta$ in Lemma A by $\xi=\xi\left(\phi_{0}\right)\left(\phi_{0} \in M_{*}^{+}\right)$everywhere and call it Lemma $\tilde{\mathrm{A}}$. (Namely we drop the assumption that $\omega_{\eta}$ is faithful. Since we shall use another faithful normal semifinite weight $\eta$ as an auxiliary tool in the proof, we introduce $\phi_{0} \in M_{*}^{+}$instead. In our application in the present paper, we need only the faithful case.) In the following proof, $\eta$ in the statement of Lemma A is understood to be replaced by $\xi$ whenever equations or statements in Lemma A are quoted. In addition $x_{j}=x_{j}^{\prime} s^{M}(\xi) x_{j}^{\prime \prime}$ in (1.27).

Proof of Lemma Ã. Let the right hand side of (1.22) be $F_{j}$. By the holomorphy, strong continuity and boundedness of (A.1) proved above, we see that $F_{j}$ is holomorphic in the interior of the domain $I_{j}$ defined by (1.23) and (1.24), continuous on $I_{j}$ and bounded as in (1.25). Within $I_{j}, F_{j}$ depends on $z_{j}^{\prime}$ and $z_{j}^{\prime \prime}$ only through their sum $z_{j}$ and $F_{j}$ $=F_{j+1}$ on $I_{j} \cap I_{j+1}$, both of which are seen by transposing operators from one member of the inner product to the other. Since $z \in I_{j}$ for all $j$ if $0 \leqq \sum \operatorname{Re} z_{j} \leqq 1 / 2$, we have single function $F(z)$ satisfying (1.22), (i), (ii) and (iii).

We use notation (1.26) and let the right hand side of (1.27) be $G_{j}$ where $x_{j}=x_{j}^{\prime} s^{M}(\xi) x_{j}^{\prime \prime}$ in addition to replacement of $\eta$ by $\xi$. If $z_{k}$ $=i t_{k}\left(t_{k} \in \boldsymbol{R}\right)$ for $k \neq j$ and $z_{j}=1+i t_{j}\left(t_{j} \in \mathbb{R}\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
F(z) & =\left(\Delta_{\phi_{j}, \xi}^{1 / 2} y_{1} \xi, \Delta_{\phi_{j}, \xi}^{1 / 2} y_{j} \xi\right)=\left(s^{M}(\xi) y_{2}^{*} \xi\left(\phi_{j}\right), y_{1}^{*} \xi\left(\phi_{j}\right)\right)  \tag{A.15}\\
& =\left(s^{M}(\xi) y_{3} s^{M}(\xi) y_{2}^{*} \xi\left(\phi_{j}\right), x_{j}^{\prime} * \xi\left(\phi_{j}\right)\right) \\
& =\left(\Delta_{\phi_{j}, \xi}^{1 / 2} x_{j}^{\prime} \xi, \Delta_{\phi_{j}, \xi}^{1 / 2}\left(y_{3} y_{2}^{*}\right) * \xi\right) \\
& =G_{j}(z),
\end{align*}
$$

where $y_{1}=x_{j}^{\prime} s^{n g}(\xi) y_{3}$,
(A. 16) $\quad x_{j}^{\prime \prime} \Delta_{\phi_{j+1}, \xi}^{i t_{j+1}} x_{j+1} \cdots d_{\phi_{n}, \xi}^{i t_{n}} x_{n} \Delta_{\xi, \xi}^{-i\left(t_{j+1}+\cdots+t_{n}\right)}=s^{M^{\prime}}(\xi) y_{3}$,
(A. 16a) $\quad y_{3}=x_{j}^{\prime \prime} u_{j+1} \sigma_{t_{j+1}}^{\eta}\left(x_{j+1} \cdots u_{n-1} \sigma_{t_{n-1}}^{\eta}\left(x_{n-1} u_{n} \sigma_{t_{n}}^{\eta}\left(x_{n}\right)\right) \cdots\right) w_{j} \in M$,
(A. 17) $\quad \Delta_{\phi_{j}, \xi^{-}}^{-i t_{j}} x_{j-1}^{*} \cdots d_{\phi_{1}, \xi}^{-i t_{t}} x_{0}^{*} \Delta_{\xi, \xi}^{i\left(t_{1}+\cdots+t_{j}\right)}=s^{M^{\prime}}(\xi) y_{2}$
(A. 17a) $\quad y_{2}=v_{j}^{*} \sigma_{-t_{j}}^{\eta}\left(x_{j-1}^{*} \cdots v_{2}^{*} \sigma_{-t_{2}}^{\eta}\left(x_{1}^{*} v_{1}^{*} \sigma_{-t_{1}}^{\eta}\left(x_{0}^{*}\right)\right) \cdots\right) w_{j}^{\prime *} \in M$,
(A. 18) $\quad u_{k}=\left(D \phi_{k}: D \eta\right)_{t_{k}} \in M, v_{k}=\left(D \eta: D \phi_{k}\right)_{-t_{k}} \in M$,
(A. 19)

$$
w_{j}=(D \eta: D \xi)_{t_{j+1}+\cdots+t_{n}}, w_{j}^{\prime}=(D \xi: D \eta)_{-t_{1}-\cdots-t_{j}},
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
s^{M^{\prime}}(\xi) y_{3} y_{2}^{*}=x_{j}^{\prime \prime} i_{\phi j+1, \xi}^{i t_{j}, \xi} x_{j+1} \cdots x_{n} \Delta_{\xi, \xi}^{-i \Sigma t_{k}} x_{0} \cdots x_{j-1} i_{\phi j, \xi}^{i t_{j}} \tag{A.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $\eta$ is any faithful normal semifinite weight for the purpose of computation. By using continuity of $F$ and $G_{j}$ and edge of wedge theorem (for $F-G_{j}$ on one side and 0 on the other), we have $F(z)=G_{j}(z)$ as an analytic function and hence $F(z)=G_{j}(z)$ for $z \in I_{1}^{(n)}$ by continuity. This proves (iv).

In passing we note the following: Using the third member of (A.15), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(z)=\left(y_{1} y_{2}^{*} \xi_{j}, \xi_{j}\right), \xi_{j} \equiv \xi\left(\phi_{j}\right), \tag{A.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
y_{1} y_{2}^{*} s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\xi_{j}\right)= & x_{j} u_{j+1} \sigma_{t_{j+1}}^{\eta}\left(x_{j+1} \cdots u_{n} \sigma_{t_{n}}^{\eta}\left(x_{n}\right) \cdots\right) w_{j} w w_{j}^{\prime} \cdots  \tag{A.22}\\
& \cdots v_{j} s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\xi_{j}\right) \\
= & x_{j} \Delta_{\phi_{j+1}, \xi_{j}}^{i t_{j+1}} x_{j+1} \cdots x_{n} \Delta_{\xi_{,}, \xi_{j}}^{-i\left(t_{1}+\cdots+t_{n}\right)} \\
& \times x_{0} \Delta_{\phi_{1}, \xi_{j}}^{i_{1}, \cdots x_{j-1}} \Delta_{\xi_{j}, \xi_{j}}^{i t} .
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore, denoting $z_{0}=1-\sum_{k=1}^{n} z_{k}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(z)=\omega_{\xi_{j}}\left(x_{j} \Delta_{\phi_{j+1}, \xi_{j}}^{z_{j+1}} \cdots x_{n} \Delta_{\phi_{0}, \xi_{j}}^{z_{0}} x_{0} \cdots \Delta_{\phi_{j-1}, \xi_{j}}^{z_{j-1}} x_{j-1}\right) \tag{A.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $z_{k}=i t_{k} \quad(k \neq j)$ and $z_{j}=1+i t_{j}$. Since

$$
\begin{equation*}
z^{(j)} \equiv\left(z_{j+1}, \cdots, z_{n}, z_{0}, z_{1}, \cdots, z_{j-1}\right) \in I_{1}^{(n)} \tag{A.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

if and only if $z \in I_{1}^{(n)}$, (A. 23) holds for $z \in I_{1}^{(n)}$ again by edge of wedge theorem.

If $\sum z_{j}=1$, then $z_{0}=0$ in (A. 23) and hence information on $\phi_{0}$ vanishes from the right hand side of (A.23). Therefore $F(z)$ is independent of $\phi_{0}$ if $\sum z_{j}=1$, which shows (vii).
(v) is immediate from definition.

To prove (vi), let us write $F(z ; \nu)$ instead of $F(z)$ where $\nu$ indicates $x$ 's and $\phi$ 's together. Suppose that $\nu_{\alpha} \rightarrow \nu$ in some sense and for any $K$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup \left\{\left|F(z ; \nu)-F\left(z ; \nu_{\alpha}\right)\right|: z \in \partial I_{1}^{(n)}, \sum\left|z_{j}\right|^{2}<K\right\} \rightarrow 0 . \tag{A.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup \left\{\left|e^{z^{2}}\left(F(z ; \nu)-F\left(z ; \nu_{\alpha}\right)\right)\right|: z \in \partial I_{1}^{(n)}\right\} \rightarrow 0 \tag{A.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $z^{2}=\sum z_{j}^{2}$. By the maximum principle for analytic functions, we have
(A. 27)

$$
\sup \left\{\left|e^{z^{2}}\left(F(\approx ; \nu)-F\left(z ; \nu_{\alpha}\right)\right)\right|: \approx \in I_{1}^{(n)}\right\} \rightarrow 0,
$$

namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup \left\{\left|F(z ; \nu)-F\left(z ; \nu_{\alpha}\right)\right|: z \in I_{1}^{(n),} \quad \sum\left|z_{j}\right|^{2}<K\right\} \rightarrow 0 . \tag{A.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

We use the original definition (such as (1.26)) on $\partial_{0} I_{1}^{(n)}$ and the right hand side of (A.23) on $\partial_{j} I_{1}^{(n)}$ where all $z_{j}$ are pure imaginary. If $x$ 's are restricted to a bounded set, all operators in sight are therefore uniformly bounded.

For boundary values, we have the following type of estimates when $\left\|y_{k}\right\| \leqq \bar{K}$ and $\left\|y_{k \alpha}\right\| \leqq \bar{K}:$
(A. 29)

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \| y_{k} \Delta_{k}^{i t_{k} \cdots y_{1} \Delta_{1}^{i t_{1}} y_{0} \xi-y_{k \alpha} \Delta_{k \alpha}^{i t_{k}} \cdots y_{1 \alpha} \Delta_{1 \alpha}^{i t_{1}} y_{0 \alpha} \xi \|} \\
& \leqq \sum_{j=0}^{k} \bar{K}^{k-j}\left\|\left(y_{j}-y_{j \alpha}\right) \zeta_{j}\right\|+\sum_{j=1}^{k} \bar{K}^{k-j+1}\left\|\left(\Delta_{j}^{i t_{j}}-\Delta_{j \alpha}^{i t_{j}}\right) \zeta_{j}^{\prime}\right\|
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta_{j}=\Delta_{j}^{i t j_{j}} y_{j-1} \cdots y_{1} \Delta_{1}^{i t_{1}} y_{0} \xi, \quad \zeta_{j}^{\prime}=y_{j-1} \zeta_{j-1} . \tag{A.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note that $\Delta_{\bar{\phi}_{\alpha}}^{i t} \rightarrow \Delta_{\tilde{\phi}}^{i t}$ uniformly in $t \in[-T, T]$ if $\left\|\widetilde{\phi}_{\alpha}-\widetilde{\phi}\right\| \rightarrow 0$ (see proof of Theorem C. 1 for $\widetilde{\phi}$ ) by proof of Theorem 10 of [2], and hence the same holds for $\Delta_{\phi_{j_{a}}, \xi_{\alpha}}^{i t} \rightarrow \Delta_{\phi_{j} ; \xi}^{i t}$. To deal with uniformity in $t$ 's appearing in $\zeta$ and $\zeta^{\prime}$, we use a finite number of $t_{12}$ such that any $t_{1} \in[-T, T]$ has some $t_{1 l}$ such that $\left\|\Delta_{1}^{i t_{1}} y_{0} \xi-\Delta_{1}^{i 1_{1} l} y_{0} \xi\right\|<\varepsilon$. After replacing $t_{1}$ by $t_{1 l}$, we proceed with approximation of $t_{2} \in[-T, T]$ by a finite number of points. We can then approximate (A.30) for $t_{k} \in[-T, T]$ by a finite number of vectors (up to $\varepsilon$ ) and hence the convergence of (A.29) is uniform over ( $t_{1}, \cdots, t_{k}$ ) provided that $t$ 's are bounded. This proves (vi).

## Appendix B. Partially Isometric Radon-Nikodym Cocycles

Let $\phi_{0}$ and $\phi$ be normal semifinite weights on $M, \phi_{0}$ be faithful, the relative modular operator $\Delta_{\phi, \phi_{0}}$ be defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\phi, \phi_{0}}=S_{\phi, \phi_{0}}^{*} \overline{S_{\phi, \phi_{0}}}, \tag{B.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{\phi, \phi_{0}} \eta_{\phi_{0}}(x)=\eta_{\phi}\left(x^{*}\right) \quad\left(x \in N_{\phi_{0}} \cap N_{\phi}^{*}\right) \tag{B.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $N_{\psi}$ is the set of all $x \in M$ with $\psi\left(x^{*} x\right)<\infty$ and $\eta_{\psi}(x)$ is the
vector in the GNS construction associated with $\psi$ satisfying $\left(\eta_{\psi}\left(x_{1}\right)\right.$, $\left.\eta_{\psi}\left(x_{2}\right)\right)=\psi\left(x_{2}^{*} x_{1}\right)$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{t}=\left(D \phi: D \phi_{0}\right)_{t}=\Lambda_{\phi, \phi_{0}}^{i t} \Delta_{\phi_{0}}^{-i t} \tag{B.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Delta_{\phi, \phi_{0}}^{i l}$ is defined as the sum of 0 on $(1-s(\phi)) H$ and the usual power of $\Delta_{\phi, \phi_{0}}$ on $s(\phi) H$.

Theorem B. 1. $u_{t}$ defined by (B.3) is a continuous one-parameter family of partial isometries in $M$ satisfying the cocycle condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{t} \sigma_{t}^{\phi_{0}}\left(u_{s}\right)=u_{t+s} \tag{B.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the support properties

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{t} u_{t}^{*}=P, \quad u_{t}^{*} u_{t}=\sigma_{t}^{\phi_{0}}(P) \tag{B.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

for a projection $P$ in $M(P=s(\phi))$. Conversely, for any continuous one-parameter family of partial isometries $u_{t}$ in $M$ satisfying (B.4) and (B.5), there exists a unique normal semifinite weight $\phi$ on $M$ such that (B.3) holds. (Then $P=s(\phi)$.)

Proof. (B. 4) and (B.5) follow from the definition (B. 3). The fact that $u_{t}$ belongs to $M$ follows from the Tomita-Takesaki theory for $2 \times 2$ matrices over $M$ restricted by the projection $\left(\begin{array}{cc}1 & 0 \\ 0 & s(\phi)\end{array}\right)$. (Theorem C. 1 ( $r$ ).)

To prove the converse, let $\phi_{1}$ be a faithful normal semifinite weight on $(1-P) M(1-P)$ and $\phi_{2}(x)=\phi_{1}((1-P) x(1-P))$. Let $v_{t}=$ $\left(D \phi_{2}: D \phi_{0}\right)_{t}$ and $w_{t}=u_{t}+v_{t}$. Then $w_{t}$ is a unitary $\sigma^{\phi_{0}}$-cocycle and hence there exists a faithful normal semifinite weight $\psi$ on $M$ such that $w_{t}=\left(D \psi: D \phi_{0}\right)_{t}$. (Theorem 1.2.4 of [9].)

From (B. 5) for $u_{t}$ (by assumption) and for $v_{t}$ with $P$ replaced by $(1-P)$ (by the first half of Theorem), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{t}^{\psi}(P)=w_{t} \sigma_{t}^{\phi_{0}}(P) w_{t}^{*}=u_{t} \sigma_{t}^{\phi_{0}}(P) u_{t}^{*}=P \tag{B.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

namely $P$ commutes with $\psi$ and hence with $\Delta_{\psi, \phi_{0}}^{i t}$. Furthermore $(1-P) w_{t}$ $=v_{t}$ and $P w_{t}=u_{t}$. From the first equation explicitly written in terms of $\Delta$ 's, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
(1-P) \Delta_{\psi, \phi_{0}}^{i t}=\Delta_{\psi, \phi_{0}}^{i t}(1-P)=\Delta_{\phi_{2}, \phi_{0}}^{i t} . \tag{В.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\Delta_{\phi_{2}, \phi_{0}}^{i t} \bar{\psi}_{\psi, \phi_{0}}^{-i t}$ is independent of $\phi_{0}$, we may replace $\phi_{0}$ by $\psi$ and we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\phi}^{z}(1-P)=J_{\phi_{2}, \psi}^{z} \tag{B.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $\approx=i t$ and hence for all $z$. By taking $\approx=1 / 2$, we see that $x \in$ $N_{\psi} \cap N_{\psi}^{*}$ (which is equivalent to $\eta_{\psi}(x) \in D\left(\Delta_{\psi}^{1 / 2}\right)$ ) implies $\eta_{\psi}((1-P) x) \in$ $D\left(\Delta_{\psi}^{1 / 2}\right)$ (because $P$ commutes with $\psi$ ), hence $x^{*} \in N_{\phi_{2}}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi\left((1-P) x x^{*}(1-P)\right)=\phi_{2}\left(x x^{*}\right) \tag{B.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

(due to $\left\|\int_{\phi_{2}, \psi}^{1 / 2} \eta_{\psi}(x)\right\|^{2}=\left\|\eta_{\phi_{9}}\left(x^{*}\right)\right\|^{2}$ ). For any $x_{0} \in M_{+}$, there exists an increasing net $x_{\alpha} \in M_{+}$such that $\psi\left(x_{\alpha}\right)<\infty$ (i.e. $x_{\alpha}^{1 / 2} \in N_{\psi} \cap N_{\psi}^{*}$ ) and $x_{0}=\sup x_{\alpha}$ due to semifiniteness of $\psi$. If $x_{0} \in\left(M_{1-P}\right)_{+}$in particular, then $x_{\alpha} \in\left(M_{1-P}\right)+$ and hence, by (B. 9),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi_{2}\left(x_{0}\right)=\sup \phi_{2}\left(x_{\alpha}\right)=\sup \psi\left(x_{\alpha}\right)=\psi\left(. x_{0}\right) . \tag{B.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since the support of $\phi_{2}$ is $1-P$, we have for any $x \in M_{+}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi_{2}(x)=\phi_{2}((1-P) x(1-P))=\psi((1-P) x(1-P)) . \tag{B.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $P$ commutes with $\psi$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(x) \equiv \psi(x)-\phi_{2}(x)=\psi(P x P), \quad x \in M_{+} \tag{B.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

is a normal semifinite weight on $M$ and Theorem C. 1 implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\psi, \phi_{0}}^{i t}=J_{\phi, \phi_{0}}^{i t}+J_{\phi_{2,}, \phi_{0}}^{i t}, \tag{B.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $s\left(\Delta_{\phi, \phi_{0}}\right)=P$. Hence $u_{t}=\left(D \phi: D \phi_{0}\right)_{t}$.
The uniqueness of $\phi$ for given $u_{t}$ follows, for example, from the uniqueness of faithful $\psi=\phi+\phi_{2}$ for a given ( $D \psi: D \phi_{0}$ ). (Theorem 1.2.4 in [9].)

## Appendix C. Relative Modular Operators

We shall use standard results on Tomita-Takesaki Theory [23]. Let $\phi$ be a normal semifinite weight, $s(\phi)$ be its support projection, $N_{\phi}$ be the set of all $x \in M$ satisfying $\phi\left(x^{*} x\right)<\infty, N_{\phi}^{*}$ be the set of $x^{*}$ with $x \in N_{\phi}, M_{\phi}$ be the linear hull of $N_{\phi}^{*} N_{\phi}$ (to which $\phi$ is extended as a finite-valued linear functional), $\sigma_{t}^{\phi}$ be modular automorphisms of $s(\phi) M s(\phi)$ determined by $\phi, N_{\phi}^{0}$ be the set of all $x \in s(\phi) N_{\phi} s(\phi)$ such
that $x$ is $\sigma_{t}^{\phi}$-entire analytic, $\sigma_{z}^{\phi}(x) \in N_{\phi}$ for all $z$ and $\eta_{\phi}\left(\sigma_{z}^{\phi}(x)\right)=\Delta_{\eta_{\phi}}^{i z} \eta_{\phi}(x)$ (which is dense in $s(\phi) M s(\phi)$ due to $\sigma^{\phi}$-invariance of $\left.s(\phi) N_{\phi} s(\phi)\right), \eta_{\phi}(x)$ for $x \in N_{\phi}$ be a GNS-representation vector satisfying ( $\eta_{\phi}\left(x_{1}\right), \eta_{\phi}\left(x_{2}\right)$ ) $=\phi\left(x_{2}^{*} x_{1}\right)$ and $x_{2} \eta_{\phi}\left(x_{1}\right)=\eta_{\phi}\left(x_{2} x_{1}\right)$ and $\mathscr{P}_{\phi}$ be the closure of the vectors $\Delta_{\phi, \phi}^{1 / 4} \eta_{\phi}(x)$ with $x \in N_{\phi} \cap M_{+}$( $\Delta_{\phi, \phi}$ is defined by (C. 2) below), which is a proper convex cone. (Any $\eta(x), x \in N_{\phi} \cap M_{+}$, is in the domain of $\Delta_{\phi, \phi}^{1 / 2}$ and hence of $\Delta_{\phi, \phi \cdot}^{1 / 4}$. . In the following all $\eta_{\phi}(x)$ is in one Hilbert space $H$ on which $M$ has a standard representation (although all discussions can be carried through even if $\eta_{\phi}(x)$ for different $\phi$ are in different Hilbert spaces). For each $\phi$, there are many choices of the map $x \in M$ $\mapsto \eta_{\phi}(x) \in H$ and we shall deal with all possibilities for $\eta_{\phi}$. Hence we denote the set of all $\eta_{\phi}$ by $\mathscr{H}$ and we introduce a notation $\phi=\omega_{\eta}$ for any given $\eta=\eta_{\phi}$. We also write $N_{\eta}$ for $N_{\phi}$ and $\sigma^{\eta}$ for $\sigma^{\phi}$ if $\eta=\eta_{\phi}$. If $\phi \in M_{*}$, then $\eta_{\phi}(x)=x \eta$ for a vector $\eta=\eta_{\phi}(1)$ and the vector state $\omega_{\eta}$ is $\phi$. The closure of $\eta\left(N_{\phi}\right)$ is $M$-invariant and the corresponding projection operator $\left(\in M^{\prime}\right)$ is denoted by $s^{M^{\prime}}(\eta)$, while $s\left(\omega_{\eta}\right) \quad(\in M)$ is denoted by $s^{M}(\eta)$. If $\omega_{\eta} \in M_{*}^{+}$, then they are $M^{\prime}$ - and $M$-support of the vector $\eta=\eta(1)$.

For $\eta_{1}$ and $\eta_{2}$ in $\mathcal{H}$, we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}\left(\eta_{2}(x)+\left(1-s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{2}\right)\right) \zeta\right)=s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) \eta_{1}\left(x^{*}\right) \tag{C.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $x \in N_{\eta_{2}} \cap N_{\eta_{1}}^{*}$ and $\zeta \in H$. If $\eta_{2}(x)+\left(1-s^{n^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right)\right) \zeta=0$, then each term (having mutually orthogonal $M^{\prime}$-support) vanishes and hence $x s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right)=0$, which implies the vanishing of the right hand side. Therefore $S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}$ is a well-defined, conjugate linear operator. We shall see below that it is closable and has a dense domain. By polar decomposition of the closure $\bar{S}_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}$, we obtain the relative modular operator

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}=S_{\eta_{1}, v_{2}}^{*} \bar{S}_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} \tag{C.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the associated partially isometric conjugate linear operator $J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{S}_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}=J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} a_{2}^{1 / 2} \eta_{1}, \eta_{2}, \tag{C.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{*} J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}=s^{M H}\left(\eta_{1}\right) s^{M L^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right), J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{*}=s^{M H}\left(\eta_{2}\right) s^{n H^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}\right)$.
In the following, $A^{2}$ for a positive selfadjoint operator $A$ denotes the sum of 0 on $(1-s(A)) H$ and usual power $A^{z}=\exp (z \log A)$ on $s(A) H$.

Theorem C.1. ( $\alpha$ ) $S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}$ is a densely defined closable operator with its support $s\left(\bar{S}_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}\right)=s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right)$ and the closure of its range $s\left(S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{*}\right)=s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{1}\right)$.
( $\beta$ ) $\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}$ is a positive selfadjoint operator with the support

$$
\begin{equation*}
s\left(\Lambda_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}\right)=s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{2}\right), \tag{C.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

depends on $\eta_{1}$ only through the weight $\omega_{\eta_{1}}$ and have the following properties.
( $\beta 1$ ) $\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{i t} x \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{-i t}=\sigma_{t}^{\eta_{1}}(x) s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right)$ for $x \in s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) M s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right)$
( $\beta 2$ ) There exists a continuous one-parameter family of elements $\left(D \phi_{1}: D \phi_{2}\right)_{t}$ of $s\left(\phi_{1}\right) M s\left(\phi_{2}\right)$ depending only on $\phi_{j}=\omega_{\eta_{j}}(j=1,2)$ and satisfying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta}^{i t} \Delta_{\eta_{2}, \eta}^{-i t}=\left(D \phi_{1}: D \phi_{2}\right)_{t} s^{M^{\prime}}(\eta) \tag{C.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $\eta$.
( $\beta 3$ ) If $x \in N_{\eta_{2}} \cap N_{\eta_{1}}^{*}$ and $0 \leqq \alpha \leqq 1 / 2$, then
$\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{2}(x)\right\|=\left\|s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) \eta_{1}\left(x^{*}\right)\right\|$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{\alpha} \eta_{2}(x)\right\| \leqq\left\|s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) \eta_{2}(x)\right\|^{1-2 \alpha}\left\|s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) \eta_{1}\left(x^{*}\right)\right\|^{2 \alpha} . \tag{C.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

( $\beta 4$ ) If $u$ is a partial isometry in $M$ such that $u^{*} u$ commutes with $\omega_{\eta_{1}}$ (in particular, if $u^{*} u \geqq s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right)$ ), then

$$
\begin{equation*}
u d_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{i t} u^{*}=\Delta_{u 0_{1}, v_{2}}^{i t} \tag{C.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we define $\left(u \circ \eta_{1}\right)(x)=\eta_{1}(x u)$ and hence $\omega_{u \circ \eta_{1}}(x)=\omega_{\eta_{1}}\left(u^{*} x u\right)$.
( $\beta 5$ ) $J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}=\Delta_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}}^{-1}$.
(r) If $s\left(\phi_{1}\right)$ and $s\left(\phi_{2}\right)$ commute, $\left(D \phi_{1}: D \phi_{2}\right)_{t}$ is a partial isometry with initial and final projections $\sigma_{t}^{\phi_{2}}\left(s\left(\phi_{1}\right) s\left(\phi_{2}\right)\right)$ and $\sigma_{t}^{\phi_{1}}\left(s\left(\phi_{1}\right) s\left(\phi_{2}\right)\right)$, having the following properties.
(r1) $\quad\left(D \phi_{1}: D \phi_{2}\right)_{t}^{*}=\left(D \phi_{2}: D \phi_{1}\right)_{t}$.
( $\gamma 2$ ) If $s\left(\phi_{2}\right) \geqq s\left(\phi_{1}\right)$, then
$\left(D \phi_{1}: D \phi_{2}\right)_{s} \sigma_{s}^{\phi_{2}}\left(\left(D \phi_{1}: D \phi_{2}\right)_{t}\right)=\left(D \phi_{1}: D \phi_{2}\right)_{s+t}$.
(r3) If $\left[s\left(\phi_{1}\right), s\left(\phi_{2}\right)\right]=0$ and $x \in M_{s\left(\phi_{1}\right) s\left(\phi_{2}\right)}$, then
$\left(D \phi_{1}: D \phi_{2}\right) \sigma_{t}^{\phi_{2}}(x)\left(D \phi_{1}: D \phi_{2}\right)_{t}^{*}=\sigma_{t}^{\phi_{1}}(x)$.
( $\gamma 4$ ) If either $s\left(\phi_{2}\right) \geqq s\left(\phi_{1}\right)$ or $s\left(\phi_{2}\right) \geqq s\left(\phi_{3}\right)$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(D \phi_{1}: D \phi_{2}\right)_{t}\left(D \phi_{2}: D \phi_{3}\right)_{t}=\left(D \phi_{1}: D \phi_{3}\right)_{t} \tag{C.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

( $\delta$ ) If $\omega_{\eta_{0}}$ is faithful, then $\mathcal{P}_{\eta_{0}}$ is a selfdual convex cone having the following properties.
(ס1) Any normal semifinite weight $\phi$ has a unique $\eta=\eta_{\phi}^{0}$ such that $\phi=\omega_{\eta}$ and $\mathscr{L}_{\eta}$ is contained in (if $\phi$ is faithful, identical with) $\mathscr{P}$ 品.
( $\delta 2$ ) Any other $\eta=\eta_{\phi}$ satisfying $\phi=\omega_{\eta}$ is related to $\eta_{\phi}^{0}$ by $\eta_{\phi}(x)$ $=u^{\prime} \eta_{\phi}^{0}(x)$ with a unique partially isometric operator $u^{\prime}$ in $M^{\prime}$ having initial and final projections $u^{\prime *} u^{\prime}=s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{\phi}^{0}\right)$ and $u^{\prime} u^{\prime *}=s^{n^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{\phi}\right)$.
(ס3) Any $\phi \in M_{*}^{+}$has the unique representative vector $\xi(\phi)$ $=\eta_{\phi}^{0}(1)$ in $\mathscr{P} \eta_{\eta_{0}}$.
(ס4) For $\xi, \zeta \in \mathscr{Q} \bar{\eta}_{0},\|\xi-\zeta\|^{2} \leqq\left\|\omega_{\xi}-\omega_{\zeta}\right\|$.
( $\varepsilon$ ) Let $J=J_{\eta_{0}, \eta_{0}}$ for a fixed $\eta_{0}$ for which $\omega_{\eta_{0}}$ is faithful. Then $J$ is a conjugate unitary involution, $j(x)=J x J \in M^{\prime}$ for any $x \in M, j(y)$ $=J y J \in M$ for any $y \in M^{\prime}$ and $J$ has the following properties.
( $\varepsilon 1) \quad$ Let $\eta_{j}=u_{j}^{\prime} \eta_{\phi_{j}}^{0}$ for $\phi_{j}=\omega_{\eta_{j}}(j=1,2)$ where $\eta_{\phi_{j}}^{0}$ is given by ( $\left.\delta 1\right)$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}=u u_{1}^{\prime} J u_{2}^{\prime *}{ }^{*}, \tag{C.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
s\left(J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}\right)=s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right), s\left(J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{*}\right)=s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}\right), \tag{C.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{*}=J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{1}} . \tag{C.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ع2) If $u^{\prime}$ is a parlial isometry in $M^{\prime}$ and $u^{*} * u^{\prime} \geqq s^{n \prime}\left(\eta_{2}\right)$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
u^{\prime} \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{i t} l^{\prime *}=\Delta_{\eta_{1}, u^{\prime} \eta_{2}}^{i t} \tag{C.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

(83) For $x \in N_{\eta_{0}}, j(x) \eta_{0}(x) \in \mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$,
(ع4) The set of $j(x) \eta_{0}(x), x \in N_{\eta_{0}}^{0}$, is dense in $\mathscr{D} \eta_{\eta_{0}}$.
( 85$) \quad A n y ~ \xi \in \mathscr{P} \eta_{\eta_{0}}$ satisfies $J \xi=\xi$.
(86) For any $\xi \in \mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$ and $x \in M, x j(x) \xi \in \mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}^{\boxminus}$.

Remark. In the situation of ( $\delta 1$ ), $\mathscr{P}_{\eta}^{\boxminus}=s(\phi) j(s(\phi)) \mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$.

Proof. ( $\alpha$ ) Let $M_{n}$ be the $n \times n$ full matrix algebra with matrix units $u_{i j}$ and $M_{n}^{\prime}$ be its commutant with matrix units $v_{i j}$ acting on a

Hilbert space of $n^{2}$ dimension with an orthonormal basis $e_{i j}$ satisfying $u_{k l} e_{i j}=\delta_{l i} e_{k j}$ and $v_{k l} e_{i j}=\delta_{l j} e_{i k}$. Let $M_{(n)} \equiv M \otimes M_{n}$ and consider $\widetilde{M}=$ $\left(M_{(n)}\right)_{E}$ with $E=\sum s^{M}\left(\eta_{i}\right) \otimes u_{i i}$, a faithful normal semifinite weight $\widetilde{\phi}$ on $\widetilde{M}$ given in terms of weights $\phi_{i}$ on $M$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{\phi}\left(\sum x_{i j} \otimes u_{i j}\right)=\sum \phi_{i}\left(x_{i i}\right) \tag{C.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

and its GNS representation given in terms of $\eta_{j}$ satisfying $\phi_{j}=\omega_{\eta_{j}}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\eta}\left(\sum x_{i j} \otimes u_{i j}\right)=\sum \eta_{j}\left(x_{i j}\right) \otimes e_{i j} \tag{C.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

on $\tilde{H} \equiv \sum s^{M}\left(\eta_{i}\right) s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{j}\right) H \otimes e_{i j}$, where $x_{i j} \in s^{M}\left(\eta_{i}\right) N_{\phi_{j}} s^{M}\left(\eta_{j}\right)$. (Note that $\eta_{j}\left(s^{M}\left(\eta_{i}\right) N_{\phi_{j}} s^{M}\left(\eta_{j}\right)\right)=s^{M}\left(\eta_{i}\right) \eta_{j}\left(N_{\phi_{j}}\right)$ is dense in $s^{M}\left(\eta_{i}\right) s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{j}\right) H$.)

By the Tomita-Takesaki Theory, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& S_{\tilde{\eta}} \tilde{\eta}(x)=\tilde{\eta}\left(x^{*}\right) \quad\left(x \in N_{\left.\tilde{\phi} \cap N_{\bar{\phi}}^{*}\right),}\right.  \tag{C.18}\\
& \Delta_{\tilde{\eta}}=S_{\eta}^{*} \bar{S}_{\bar{\eta}}, \quad \bar{S}_{\bar{\eta}}=J_{\bar{\eta}} \Delta_{\bar{\eta}}^{1 / 2} . \tag{C.19}
\end{align*}
$$

Since $1 \otimes u_{i i}$ commutes with $\widetilde{\phi}$, it commutes with $\Delta_{\bar{\eta}}$,
(C. 20) $\quad\left(1 \otimes u_{i i}\right) \tilde{j}\left(1 \otimes u_{j j}\right) \tilde{\eta}(x)=\tilde{\eta}\left(\left(1 \otimes u_{i i}\right) x\left(1 \otimes u_{j j}\right)\right) \equiv \eta_{j}\left(x_{i j}\right) \otimes e_{i j}$
for $x \in N_{\tilde{\phi}} \cap N_{\tilde{\phi}}^{*}$ (which implies $\tilde{\eta}\left(\widetilde{x}_{i j}\right) \in D\left(S_{\tilde{\eta}}\right)$ and hence $\widetilde{x}_{i j} \in N_{\tilde{\phi}} \cap N_{\tilde{\phi}}^{*}$ for $\left.\widetilde{x}_{i j}=\left(1 \otimes u_{i i}\right) x\left(1 \otimes u_{j j}\right)=x_{i j} \otimes u_{i j}\right)$, and vectors (C. 20) are dense in $\left(1 \otimes u_{i i}\right) \tilde{j}\left(1 \otimes u_{j j}\right) \tilde{H}$. From (C.20), $\tilde{j}\left(1 \otimes u_{j j}\right)=1 \otimes v_{j j}$ and $\eta_{j}\left(x_{i j}\right)$ with $x_{i j} \otimes u_{i j} \in N_{\tilde{\phi}} \cap N_{\dot{\phi}}^{*}$ are dense in $s^{M}\left(\eta_{i}\right) s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{j}\right) H$. Since $\tilde{\eta}\left(x_{i j} \otimes u_{i j}\right)=\eta_{j}\left(x_{i j}\right.$ $\otimes e_{i j}$ and $\tilde{\eta}\left(\left(x_{i j} \otimes u_{i j}\right)^{*}\right)=\eta_{i}\left(x_{i j}^{*}\right) \otimes e_{j i}$, we have $x_{i j} \in N_{\phi_{j}} \cap N_{\phi_{i}}^{*}$. Therefore $\eta_{2}(x)$ with $x \in N_{\eta_{2}} \cap N_{\eta_{1}}^{*} \cap s\left(\phi_{1}\right) M s\left(\phi_{2}\right)$ are dense in $s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right) H$.

Since $N_{\phi_{2}}=N_{\phi_{2}} s\left(\phi_{2}\right)+M\left(1-s\left(\phi_{2}\right)\right)$ and $N_{\phi_{2}}$ is a left ideal in $M$, $(1$ $\left.-s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right) N_{\phi_{2}} s\left(\phi_{2}\right)$ is in $N_{\phi_{2}}$. It is also in $N_{\phi_{1}}^{*}$ because $N_{\phi_{1}} \supset M\left(1-s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right)$. Thus $\left(1-s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right) N_{\phi_{2}} s\left(\phi_{2}\right)$ is in $N_{\phi_{2}} \cap N_{\phi_{1}}^{*}$ and $\eta_{2}\left(\left(1-s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right) N_{\phi_{2}} s\left(\phi_{2}\right)\right)=(1$ $\left.-s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right) \eta_{2}\left(N_{\phi_{2}}\right)$ is dense in $\left(1-s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right) s^{n \prime}\left(\eta_{2}\right) H$. Combining with the above, we see that $\eta_{2}\left(N_{\phi_{2}} \cap N_{\phi_{1}}^{*}\right)$ is dense in $s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{2}\right) H$ and $S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}$ is densely defined.

By definition, $S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}$ is 0 on $\left(1-s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right) \eta_{2}\left(N_{\phi_{2}}\right)$ and on $\left(1-s^{H \prime}\left(\eta_{2}\right)\right) H$. It is closable on $s\left(\phi_{1}\right) \eta_{2}\left(N_{\phi_{2}}\right)$ and its closure has zero kernel on $s\left(\phi_{1}\right) s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right) H$ because of the same known property for $S_{\bar{\eta}}$. Therefore $S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}$ is closable and the support of its closure is $s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) s^{M L^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right)$.

By interchanging $\phi_{1}$ and $\phi_{2}, \eta_{1}\left(x^{*}\right)$ with $x^{*} \in N_{\phi_{1}} \cap N_{\phi_{2}}^{*}$ is dense in
$s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}\right) H$. Therefore $s\left(S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{*}\right)=s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}\right) s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right)$.
( $\beta$ ) By definition and the above result for $s\left(\bar{S}_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}\right), \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}$ is a positive selfadjoint operator with its support given by (C.4). If $\eta_{1}^{\prime}$ and $\eta_{1}$ give the same weight $\phi_{1}$, then define $u^{\prime}$ as the sum of 0 on $\left(1-s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}\right)\right) H$ and the closure of $u^{\prime} \eta_{1}(x)=\eta_{1}^{\prime}(x), x \in N_{\phi_{1}}$, on $s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}\right) H$. Then $u^{\prime}$ is partially isometric and commutes with $x_{1} \in M$ due to

$$
\begin{equation*}
u^{\prime} x_{1} \eta_{1}(x)=u^{\prime} \eta_{1}\left(x_{1} x\right)=\eta_{1}^{\prime}\left(x_{1} x\right)=x_{1} \eta_{1}^{\prime}(x)=x_{1} u^{\prime} \eta_{1}(x) \tag{C.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore $u^{\prime} \in M^{\prime}$. We obtain from (C. 1)

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{\eta_{1}^{\prime}, \eta_{2}}=u^{\prime} S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} \tag{C.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since

$$
\begin{align*}
s\left(J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{*}\right) & =s\left(S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{*}\right)=s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) s^{I^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}\right)  \tag{C.23}\\
& \leqq s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}\right)=u^{*} u^{\prime}
\end{align*}
$$

$u^{\prime} J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}$ is partially isometric and we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\eta_{1}^{\prime}, \eta_{2}}^{\prime}=\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} \tag{C.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

as well as
(C. 25)

$$
J_{\eta_{1}^{\prime}, \eta_{2}}=u^{\prime} J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}
$$

( $\beta 1$ ) By comparing definition of $\Delta_{\tilde{\eta}}$ and $\Delta_{\eta_{i}, \eta_{j}}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\tilde{\eta}}=\sum \Delta_{\eta_{i}, \eta_{j}} \otimes u_{i i} v_{j j} \tag{C.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $x_{11} \in s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) M s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\bar{\eta}}^{i t}\left(x_{11} \otimes u_{11}\right) \Delta_{\bar{\eta}}^{-i t}=\sigma_{t}^{\tilde{t}}\left(x_{11} \otimes u_{11}\right) \tag{С.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $1 \otimes u_{11}$ commutes with $\tilde{\phi}$ and the restriction of $\tilde{\phi}$ to $\widetilde{M}_{1 \otimes u_{11}}=$ $M_{s\left(\phi_{1}\right)} \otimes u_{11} \sim M_{s\left(\phi_{1}\right)}$ is $\phi_{1}$, the characterization of modular automorphisms by KMS condition implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{i}^{\pi}\left(x_{11} \otimes u_{11}\right)=\sigma_{t}^{\phi_{1}}\left(x_{11}\right) \otimes u_{11} \tag{C.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

By restricting (C.27) to $\left(1 \otimes u_{11} v_{22}\right) \widetilde{H}$, we obtain $(\beta 1)$ on $s^{M I}\left(\eta_{1}\right) s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right) H$ and hence on $H$ (due to the support property of two sides of the equation).
( $\beta 2$ ) $\quad$ Since $1 \otimes u_{k k} \quad(k=i$ or $j)$ is $\sigma^{\tilde{\phi}}$-invariant, $u_{i i} u_{i j}=u_{i j} u_{j j}=u_{i j}$ implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{t}^{\tilde{t}}\left(s\left(\phi_{i}\right) s\left(\phi_{j}\right) \otimes u_{i j}\right)=U_{t} \otimes u_{i j} \tag{C.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $U_{t} \in s\left(\phi_{i}\right) M s\left(\phi_{j}\right)$. By (C.26),

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{t} \otimes u_{i j}=\sum_{k} d_{\eta_{i}, \eta_{k}}^{i t}-_{\eta_{j}, \eta_{k}}^{-i t} \otimes u_{i j} v_{k k} \tag{C.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

By multiplying $1 \otimes v_{k k}$, we obtain (C.5) with $U_{t}=\left(D \phi_{i}: D \phi_{j}\right)_{t}$ and $\eta=\eta_{k}$ on $s^{M}\left(\eta_{j}\right) s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{k}\right) H$ and hence on $H$. Since $\Delta_{\eta_{i}, \eta}$ depends on $\eta_{i}$ only through $\phi_{i}, U_{t}$ depends only on $\phi_{i}$ and $\phi_{j}$.
$(\beta 3)$ The first equation follows from

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) \eta_{1}\left(x^{*}\right)\right\|=\left\|S_{\phi_{1}, \phi_{2}} \eta_{2}(x)\right\|=\left\|\Delta_{\phi_{1}, \phi_{2}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{2}(x)\right\| . \tag{C.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then (C.7) is due to Hölder inequality. (Note that $\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{0}=s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right)$ and $s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{2}\right) \eta_{2}(x)=\eta_{2}(x)$.)
( $\beta 4$ ) We have
(C. 32) $\quad S_{u \text { o者 }, \eta_{2}}\left(\eta_{2}(x)+\left(1-s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right)\right) \zeta\right)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) \eta_{1}\left(x^{*} u\right)=S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}\left(\eta_{2}\left(u^{*} x\right)+\left(1-s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{2}\right)\right) u^{*} \zeta\right) \\
& =S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} u^{*}\left(\eta_{2}(x)+\left(1-s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{2}\right)\right) \zeta\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore
(C. 33)

$$
S_{u_{0} \eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}=S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} u^{*}
$$

Hence we have
(C. 34)

$$
\Delta_{u \eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}=u \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} u^{*} .
$$

Since $s\left(\Delta_{\eta_{1}, v_{2}}\right)$ commute with the initial projection $u^{*} u$ of $u$, we have (C. 8).
( $\beta 5$ ) From definition $\bar{S}_{\bar{\eta}}=J_{\bar{\eta}} 1_{\bar{\eta}}^{1 / 2}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\bar{\eta}}\left(\sum \zeta_{i j} \otimes e_{i j}\right)=\sum\left(J_{\eta_{i}, \eta_{j}} \zeta_{i j}\right) \otimes e_{j i} \tag{C.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence ( $\beta 5$ ) follows from $J_{\bar{\eta}} \Delta_{\bar{\eta}} J_{\bar{\eta}}=\Delta_{\bar{\eta}}^{-1}$.
$(\gamma)$ If $s\left(\phi_{1}\right)$ and $s\left(\phi_{2}\right)$ commute, then $s\left(\phi_{1}\right) s\left(\phi_{2}\right) \otimes u_{12}$ is partially isometric and hence (C.29) shows that $\left(D \phi_{1}: D \phi_{2}\right)_{t}$ is a partially isometry. Since $s\left(\phi_{1}\right) s\left(\phi_{2}\right) \otimes u_{i i}$ ( $i=2$ and 1) are initial and final projections for $s\left(\phi_{1}\right) s\left(\phi_{2}\right) \otimes u_{12}, \sigma_{t}^{\bar{\eta}}\left(s\left(\phi_{1}\right) s\left(\phi_{2}\right) \otimes u_{i i}\right)=\sigma_{t}^{\phi_{i}}\left(s\left(\phi_{1}\right) s\left(\phi_{2}\right)\right) \otimes u_{i i} \quad(i=2$ and 1) are those for $U_{t} \otimes u_{12}$. Hence ( $\gamma$ ) holds.

$$
(\gamma 1) \sim(\gamma 4) \text { follows from (C. } 5)
$$

( $\varepsilon$ ) This is a standard result of the Tomita-Takesaki theory.
( $\varepsilon 1$ ) (C.13) follows from ( $\alpha$ ). (C. 35) and $J_{\bar{j}}^{2}=1$ implies $J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{2}}=s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{1}\right)$ on $s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{1}\right) H$ and hence on $H$. Multiplying $J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}^{*}$, we obtain (C.14).

Due to $J_{\tilde{\eta}}\left(s\left(\phi_{1}\right) s\left(\phi_{3}\right) \otimes u_{13}\right) J_{\tilde{\eta}} \in \widetilde{M}^{\prime}$, we have
(C. 36)

$$
w=J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} s\left(\phi_{1}\right) s\left(\phi_{3}\right) J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{3}}=J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{3}} \in s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}\right) M^{\prime} s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{3}\right)
$$

on $s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) H$ and $w$ is independent of $\eta_{2}$. Hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} s^{M}\left(\eta_{3}\right)=w J_{\eta_{3}, \eta_{2}} \tag{C.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

on H . Taking $\eta_{2}=\eta_{3}=\eta_{0}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}}=w_{1} J \tag{C.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

with a partial isometry $w_{1}$ in $s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\phi_{1}\right) M^{\prime}$. By taking adjoint, we have $J_{\eta_{0}, \eta_{1}}=J w_{1}^{*}$. Taking $\eta_{3}=\eta_{0}$ in (C. 37), we then obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}=w_{1} J_{\eta_{0}, \eta_{2}}=w_{1} J w_{2}^{*} \tag{C.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

We have $w_{1} w_{1}^{*}=J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}} J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}}^{*}=s^{M I^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}\right)$. Hence $\eta_{10} \equiv w_{1}^{*} \eta_{1}$ satisfies $\omega_{\eta_{10}}$ $=\omega_{\eta_{1}}, \eta_{1}=w_{1} \eta_{10}$ and $J_{\eta_{10}, \eta_{0}}=w_{1}^{*} J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}}=w_{1}^{*} w_{1} J=s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{10}\right) J$. After proof of ( $\delta 1$ ), we prove that $J_{\eta_{10}^{\prime}, \eta_{0}}=s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{1}\right) J$ for $\eta_{10}^{\prime}=\eta_{\phi_{1}}^{0}$ given by ( $\delta 1$ ). Let $u^{\prime}$ be given by ( $\delta 2$ ) satisfying $\eta_{10}=u^{\prime} \eta_{10}^{\prime}$. By definition, we have $S_{\eta_{10}, \eta_{0}}$ $=u^{\prime} S_{\eta_{10}^{\prime}, \eta_{0}}$ and hence $J_{\eta_{10}, \eta_{0}}=u^{\prime} J_{\eta_{10}^{\prime}, \eta_{0}}$. This implies $u^{\prime}=s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{10}\right)$ and hence $\eta_{10}^{\prime}=u^{\prime *} \eta_{10}=\eta_{10}$. Therefore $w_{1}=u_{1}^{\prime}$. Similarly $w_{2}=u_{2}^{\prime}$. Thus we obtain (C. 12).
(82) By replacing $u^{\prime}$ by $u^{\prime} s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{2}\right)$, we may assume that $u^{\prime *} u^{\prime}=$ $s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right)$. Then $s^{M^{\prime}}\left(u^{\prime} \eta_{2}\right)=u^{\prime} u^{\prime *}$ and $s^{M}\left(u^{\prime} \eta_{2}\right)=s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) \quad$ (due to $\omega_{u^{\prime} \eta_{2}}=\omega_{\eta_{2}}$ ). Therefore

$$
\begin{align*}
S_{\eta_{1}, u^{\prime} \eta_{2}} & \left(u^{\prime} \eta_{2}(x)+\left(1-s^{M \prime}\left(u^{\prime} \eta_{2}\right)\right) \zeta\right)  \tag{C.40}\\
& =s^{M}\left(u^{\prime} \eta_{2}\right) \eta_{1}\left(x^{*}\right)=s^{M}\left(\eta_{2}\right) \eta_{1}\left(x^{*}\right) \\
& =S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}}\left(\eta_{2}(x)+\left(1-s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\eta_{2}\right)\right) u^{\prime *} \zeta\right) \\
& =S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} u^{*}\left(u^{\prime} \eta_{2}(x)+\left(1-s^{M^{\prime}}\left(u^{\prime} \eta_{2}\right)\right) \zeta\right)
\end{align*}
$$

This implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{\eta_{1}, u^{\prime} \eta_{2}}=S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{2}} u^{*} * \tag{C.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

and hence (C.15).
(ع3) If $x_{n} \in N_{\eta_{0}}^{0} \cap\left(N_{\eta_{0}}^{0}\right) *=N_{\eta_{0}}^{0} \quad$ (due to $x_{n}^{*} \in N_{\eta_{0}}$ and $\eta_{0}\left(x_{n}^{*}\right)=$
$J \eta_{0}\left(\sigma_{-i / 2}^{\eta_{0}}\left(x_{n}\right)\right)$ for $\left.x_{n} \in N_{\eta_{0}}^{0}\right)$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
J \eta_{0}\left(x_{n}\right)=\Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{0}\left(x_{n}^{*}\right)=\eta_{0}\left(\sigma_{-i / 2}^{\eta}\left(x^{*}\right)\right) . \tag{C.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence

$$
\begin{align*}
\Delta_{n_{0}}^{1 / 4} \eta_{0}\left(x_{n}^{*} x_{n}\right) & =\eta_{0}\left(\sigma_{-i / 2}^{\eta_{0}}\left(\left(\sigma_{-i / 4}^{\eta_{0}}\left(x_{n}^{*} x_{n}\right)\right)^{*}\right)\right)  \tag{C.43}\\
& =J \eta_{0}\left(\sigma_{-i / 4}^{\eta_{0}}\left(x_{n}^{*}\right) \sigma_{-i / 4}^{\eta_{0}}\left(x_{n}\right)\right) \\
& =j\left(\sigma_{-i / 4}^{\eta_{0}}\left(x_{n}^{*}\right)\right) J \eta_{0}\left(\sigma_{-i / 4}^{\eta_{0}}\left(x_{n}\right)\right) \\
& =j\left(\sigma_{-i / 4}^{\eta_{0}}\left(x_{n}^{*}\right)\right) \eta_{0}\left(\sigma_{-i / 4}^{\eta_{0}}\left(x_{n}^{*}\right)\right) \\
& =j\left(x_{n 1}\right) \eta_{0}\left(x_{n 1}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

with $x_{n 1}=\sigma_{-i / 4}^{\eta_{0}}\left(x_{n}^{*}\right)$. Let $x \in N_{\eta_{0}}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{n}=(n / \pi)^{1 / 2} \int \sigma_{t}^{\eta_{0}}\left(x^{*}\right) \exp \left(-n(t+(i / 4))^{2}\right) d t \tag{C.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $x_{n}$ has the property mentioned above and

$$
\begin{align*}
& x_{n 1}=\varepsilon_{n}^{\eta_{0}}(x) \equiv(n / \pi)^{1 / 2} \int \sigma_{t_{0}}^{\eta_{0}}(x) \exp \left(-n t^{2}\right) d t  \tag{C.45}\\
& \eta_{0}\left(x_{n 1}\right)=(n / \pi)^{1 / 2} \int \Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{i t} \eta_{0}(x) \exp \left(-n t^{2}\right) d t \tag{C.46}
\end{align*}
$$

which converges strongly to $x$ and $\eta_{0}(x)$ respectively as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Therefore $j(x) \eta_{0}(x)$ for $x \in N_{\eta_{0}}$ is in $\mathscr{L} \bar{\eta}_{0}$ as the limit of $\eta_{0}\left(\sigma_{-i / 4}^{\eta_{0}}\left(x_{n}^{*} x_{n}\right)\right) \in \mathscr{P}$ 䎏.
( $\varepsilon 4$ ) For $x \in N_{\eta_{0}} \cap M_{+}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 4} \eta_{0}(x)\right\|^{2}=\left(\eta_{0}(x), \Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{0}(x)\right)=\left(\eta_{0}(x), J \eta_{0}(x)\right) . \tag{C.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence $\eta_{0}\left(x_{\alpha}\right) \rightarrow \eta_{0}(x)$ implies $\Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 4} \eta_{0}\left(x_{\alpha}\right) \rightarrow \Delta_{\eta_{0} / 4}^{1 / 4} \eta_{0}(x)$ for $x_{\alpha} \in N_{\eta_{0}} \cap M_{+}$.
Let $y \in N_{\eta_{0}}$. Then $\varepsilon_{n}^{\eta_{0}}(y) \in N_{\eta_{0}}^{0}, \quad \eta_{0}\left(\varepsilon_{n}^{\eta_{0}}(y)\right) \rightarrow \eta_{0}(y), \varepsilon_{n}^{\eta_{0}}(y) * \rightarrow y^{*}$ and hence $\Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 4} \eta_{0}\left(\varepsilon_{n}^{\eta_{0}}(y) * \varepsilon_{n}^{\eta_{0}}(y)\right) \rightarrow \Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 4} \eta_{0}\left(y^{*} y\right)$. In view of (C. 43), $\Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 4}\left(y^{*} y\right)$ is in the closure of the set of $j(x) \eta_{0}(x), x \in N_{\eta_{0}}^{0}$.

Let $e_{\alpha}=e_{\alpha}^{*}$ be a uniformly bounded net in $N_{\eta_{0}}$ tending to 1 . By approximating $\Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{i t} \xi$ (for a fixed vector $\xi$ ) in norm over a compact set of $t$ by a finite number of $t=t_{j}$, we find that the net $\sigma_{z}^{\eta_{0}}\left(\varepsilon_{n}^{\eta_{0}}\left(e_{\alpha}\right)\right)$ for any fixed $z$ and $n$ tends to 1 strongly. For $x \in N_{\eta_{0}} \cap M_{+}$, we set $y=x^{1 / 2} \varepsilon_{n}^{70}\left(e_{\alpha}\right)$. By the formula
(C. 48)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\eta_{0}(x e) & =J \Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{0}\left(e^{*} x^{*}\right)=j\left(\sigma_{-i / 2}^{\eta_{0}}\left(e^{*}\right)\right) J \Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{0}\left(x^{*}\right) \\
& =j\left(\sigma_{-i / 2}^{\eta_{0}}\left(e^{*}\right)\right) \eta_{0}(x)
\end{aligned}
$$

for $e^{*}=e=\varepsilon_{n}\left(e_{\alpha}\right)$ ，we see that $\eta_{0}\left(y^{*} y\right)=e j\left(\sigma_{-i / 2}^{\eta_{0}}\left(e^{*}\right)\right) \eta_{0}(x) \rightarrow \eta_{0}(x)$ ．By （C．47），$\Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 4} \eta_{0}(x)$ for $x \in N_{\eta_{0}}^{0} \cap M_{+}$is in the closure of the set of $\Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 4} \eta_{0}\left(y^{*} y\right), y \in N_{\eta_{0}}$ and hence of $j(x) \eta_{o}(x), x \in N_{\eta_{0}}^{0}$ ．
（ع5）If $x \in N_{\eta_{0}} \cap M_{+}$，then $x \in N_{\eta_{0}} \cap N_{\eta_{0}}^{*}$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
J \Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{0}(x)=\eta_{0}(x) . \tag{C.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $\Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 4} J=J \Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{-1 / 4}$ ，we obtain $J$－invariance of $\Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 4} \eta_{0}(x)$ ．
（86）If $y \in N_{\eta_{0}}$ ，then（ $\varepsilon 3$ ）implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
x j(x)\left(j(y) \eta_{0}(y)\right)=j(x y) \eta_{0}(x y) \in \mathscr{P} \eta_{0} \tag{C.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $x \in M$ ．By（ $\varepsilon 4$ ），the set of $j(y) \eta_{0}(y), y \in N_{\eta_{0}}^{0}$ is already dense in $\mathscr{P}$ 搨．Hence $x j(x) \xi \in \mathscr{P}$ 䎏 if $\xi \in \mathscr{P}$ 搨．
（ $\delta$ ）The rest of Theorem is proved in［22］．For sake of selfcon－ tained exposition，we include here somewhat different proof． $\mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$ is a convex cone by definition．For $x, y \in N_{\eta_{0}}^{0}$ ，

$$
\begin{align*}
j(x) \eta_{0}(y) & =J x \eta_{0}\left(\sigma_{-i / 2}^{\eta_{0}}\left(y^{*}\right)\right)  \tag{C.51}\\
& =\eta_{0}\left(\sigma_{-i / 2}^{\eta_{0}}\left(\left\{x \sigma_{-i / 2}^{\eta_{0}}\left(y^{*}\right)\right\}^{*}\right)\right) \\
& =y J \eta_{0}(x)
\end{align*}
$$

by（C．42）．（The formula holds for any $x, y \in N_{\eta_{0}}$ through an approxi－ mation by $\varepsilon_{n}^{\eta_{0}}(x)$ and $\varepsilon_{n}^{\eta_{0}}(y)$ ．）Hence for $x_{1}, x_{2} \in N_{\eta_{0}}^{0}$ ，
（C．52）$\quad\left(j\left(x_{1}\right) \eta_{0}\left(x_{1}\right), j\left(x_{2}\right) \eta_{0}\left(x_{2}\right)\right)=\left(\eta_{0}\left(x_{1}\right), j\left(x_{1}^{*} x_{2}\right) \eta_{0}\left(x_{2}\right)\right)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =\left(\eta_{0}\left(x_{1}\right), x_{2} J \eta_{0}\left(x_{1}^{*} x_{2}\right)\right) \\
& =\left(\eta_{0}\left(x_{2}^{*} x_{1}\right), \Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{0}\left(x_{2}^{*} x_{1}\right)\right) \geqq 0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

By（ $\varepsilon 4$ ），$\left(\xi_{1}, \xi_{2}\right) \geqq 0$ for any $\xi_{1}, \xi_{2} \in \mathscr{P}$ 留，i．e．

To prove the converse inclusion，let $\zeta$ satisfy $\left(\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right) \geqq 0$ for all $\zeta^{\prime} \in \mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$. Let $\xi \in \mathscr{D}_{\eta_{0}} . \mathrm{By}(\varepsilon 5), s^{M^{\prime}}(\xi)=j\left(s^{M}(\xi)\right)$ ．Let $e=s^{M}(\xi) j\left(s^{M}(\xi)\right)$ and consider $M_{e}$ on $e H$ ．Then $\xi$ is a cyclic and separating vector for $M_{e}$ on $e H, \Delta_{\xi, \varepsilon}$ is the usual modular operator for $\xi$ on $e H$（being 0 on $(1-e) H$ ）and hence the closure of $\Delta_{\xi}^{1 / 4} \eta_{\xi}(x)=\Delta_{\xi}^{1 / 4} x \xi=\Delta_{\xi}^{1 / 4} e x e \xi, x \in M$ is $V_{\xi}^{1 / 4}=\mathscr{P}_{\xi}^{\xi}$ defined in［2］．Hence it is the closure of the set of $x j(x) \xi$ ， $x \in M_{e}$ ，which is a subset of $\mathscr{P} \eta_{0}$ by（ 86 ）and hence contained in $e \mathscr{P} \boldsymbol{\eta}_{0}$ ，
which in turn is contained in $\mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$ by（ $\varepsilon 6$ ）．
For $\zeta^{\prime} \in \mathscr{D}$ 寻 $\subset \mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$ ，we have $\left(e \zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right)=\left(\zeta, \zeta^{\prime}\right) \geqq 0$ ．By the selfduality of $\mathscr{L}$ 白 in $e H$（Theorem 4 of［2］），we have $e \zeta \in \mathscr{D}$ 晏 $\subset \mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$ ．The rest is to find $\xi_{\alpha} \in \mathscr{D} \eta_{0}$ such that $e_{\alpha}=s^{M}\left(\xi_{\alpha}\right) j\left(s^{M}\left(\xi_{\alpha}\right)\right)$（as a net）tends to 1 ．

By（ $\varepsilon 3), \xi=j(x) \eta_{0}(x) \in \mathscr{P} \bar{\eta}_{0}$ ．We shall show that $s^{M}(\xi)=s\left(x^{*}\right)$ for $x \in N_{\eta_{0}}^{0}$ ．Since $N_{\eta_{0}}^{0}$ is a dense subset in $M,\left\{s\left(x^{*}\right): x \in N_{\eta_{0}}\right\}$ with usual partial ordering of projections is a net tending to 1 ．Let $e \in M$ and $e j(x) \eta_{0}(x)=0$ ．Then $j\left(x_{1}\right) \eta_{0}\left(x_{1}\right)=0$ for $x_{1}=x^{*} e x \in N_{\eta_{0}} \cap M_{+}$．For $y \in N_{\eta_{0}}$ ，we have

$$
\begin{align*}
0 & =\left(\eta_{0}(y), j\left(x_{1}\right) \eta_{0}\left(x_{1}\right)\right)=\left(j\left(x_{1}^{*}\right) \eta_{0}(y), \eta_{0}\left(x_{1}\right)\right)  \tag{C.54}\\
& =\left(y J \eta_{0}\left(x_{1}^{*}\right), \eta_{0}\left(x_{1}\right)\right)=\left(y \Delta_{\eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{0}\left(x_{1}\right), \eta_{0}\left(x_{1}\right)\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Taking a limit of a net $y=y_{\alpha}$ tending to 1 ，we may replace $y$ by 1 ．Since $\Delta_{\eta_{0}}$ is positive definite，we have $\eta_{0}\left(x_{1}\right)=0$ ．Since $\eta_{0}$ is faithful，this implies $(e x)^{*}(e x)=x_{1}=0$ ．Hence $e x=0$ ，which shows $s^{M}(\xi)=s\left(x^{*}\right)$ ．
（ $\delta 1$ ）First we prove the statement for faithful $\phi$ ．There exists some $\eta_{1}$ with $\omega_{\eta_{1}}=\phi$ ．By the proof of（ $\varepsilon 1$ ），there exists a partial isometry $u^{\prime} \in M^{\prime}$ such that $J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}}=u^{\prime} J$ ．Since $1=s^{M}\left(\eta_{0}\right)=j\left(u^{\prime *} u^{\prime}\right), u^{\prime}$ must be iso－ metric．Let $\eta=\left(u^{\prime}\right)^{*} \eta_{1}$ ．Then $\omega_{\eta}=\phi$ and $J_{\eta, \eta_{0}}=J$ due to

$$
\begin{align*}
S_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}} \eta_{0}(x) & =\left(u^{\prime}\right) * \eta_{1}\left(x^{*}\right)=\left(u^{\prime}\right) * J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}} \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{0}(x)  \tag{C.55}\\
& =J \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{0}(x) .
\end{align*}
$$

We can now use the formula（C．51）and（ $\varepsilon 4$ ）for both $\eta_{0}$ and $\eta$ with common $j$ and $J$ ．For $x \in N_{\eta_{0}}$ and $y \in N_{\eta}$ ，we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(j(x) \eta_{0}(x), j(y) \eta(y)\right)=\left(j\left(y^{*} x\right) \eta_{0}(x), \eta(y)\right)  \tag{C.56}\\
& \quad=\left(x J \eta_{0}\left(y^{*} x\right), \eta(y)\right)=\left(J \eta_{0}\left(y^{*} x\right), \eta\left(x^{*} y\right)\right) \\
& \quad=\left(J \eta\left(x^{*} y\right), \eta_{0}\left(y^{*} x\right)\right)=\left(\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{0}\left(y^{*} x\right), \eta_{0}\left(y^{*} x\right)\right) \geqq 0 .
\end{align*}
$$

Hence $\mathscr{P}$ 白 $\subset\left(\mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}\right)^{*}=\mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$ and $\mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}} \subset\left(\mathscr{P}_{\eta}\right)^{*}=\mathscr{P} \mathscr{P}_{\eta}$ ，i．e． $\mathscr{P}$ 白 $=\mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$ ．
Now consider a general normal semifinite weight $\phi_{1}$ ．Let $\phi_{2}$ be a normal semifinite weight with support $s\left(\phi_{2}\right)=1-s\left(\phi_{1}\right)$ ．Then $\phi=\phi_{1}+\phi_{2}$ is faithful and $s\left(\phi_{1}\right)$ commutes with $\phi$ ．Let $\eta$ be as above and $\eta_{1}(x)$ $=\eta\left(x s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right)$ for $x \in N_{\phi_{1}}$ ．Then $\omega_{\eta_{1}}=\phi_{1}$ ．

By $s\left(\Lambda_{\eta_{1}}\right)=s^{M}\left(\eta_{1}\right) s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{1}\right)=s\left(\phi_{1}\right) j\left(s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right) \equiv e_{1}, \quad \mathscr{P} \underline{\eta}_{1} \quad$ is in $e_{1} H$ and is generated by $\Delta_{\eta_{1}}^{1 / 4} \eta_{1}(x)=\Delta_{\eta_{1}}^{1 / 4} \eta_{1}\left(s\left(\phi_{1}\right) x s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right)$ ．The characterization of
modular automorphisms by KMS condition shows that $\sigma_{t}^{\eta}(y)=\sigma_{t}^{\eta_{1}}(y)$ for $y \in s\left(\phi_{1}\right) M s\left(\phi_{1}\right) \quad\left(\right.$ where $s\left(\phi_{1}\right)$ is $\sigma^{\eta}$－invariant）and hence $\Delta_{\eta}^{i t} \eta(y)=\Delta_{\eta_{1}}^{i t} \eta_{1}(y)$ ． Therefore $\mathscr{D}_{\eta_{1}}$ is generated by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\eta_{1}}^{1 / 4} \eta_{1}(x)=\Delta_{\eta}^{1 / 4} \eta\left(s\left(\phi_{1}\right) x s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right) \in \mathscr{P} \mathscr{\eta}_{\eta} \tag{C.57}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $x \in N_{\eta_{1}} \cap M_{+}$，which shows $\mathscr{P}_{\eta_{1}} \subset \mathscr{P} \boldsymbol{Q}_{\eta}$ for this $\eta_{1}$ ．
To prove the uniqueness，let $\eta_{1}^{\prime}$ be such that $\omega_{\eta_{1}^{\prime}}^{\prime}=\phi_{1}$ and $\mathscr{D} \bar{\eta}_{1}^{\prime} \subset \mathscr{P}$ 另． Then there exists a partial isometry $u^{\prime} \in M^{\prime}$ such that $\eta_{1}^{\prime}(x)=u^{\prime} \eta_{1}(x)$ for $x \in N_{\phi_{1}}$ and $u^{\prime *} u^{\prime}=s^{n \prime}\left(\eta_{1}\right)$ ．For any $x \in N_{\phi_{1}}^{0} \cap M_{+}, \xi=\eta_{1}\left(\sigma_{-i / 4}^{\phi_{1}}(x)\right)$ and $\xi^{\prime}=u^{\prime} \xi$ ．Then $\xi \in \mathscr{P}_{\eta_{1}} \subset \mathcal{P}_{\eta}$ and $\xi^{\prime} \in \mathscr{P}_{\eta_{1}} \subset \mathcal{P}_{\eta}$ ．We also have $\omega_{\xi}$ $=\omega_{\xi^{\prime}}$ and hence $s^{M}(\xi)=s^{M}\left(\xi^{\prime}\right)$ ，as well as $s^{M^{\prime}}\left(\xi^{\prime}\right)=j\left(s^{M}(\xi)\right)=s^{n I^{\prime}}\left(\xi^{\prime}\right)$ ． If we restrict our attention to $M_{e}$ on $e H$ with $e=s^{M I}(\xi) s^{M^{\prime}}(\xi)$ ，then $e \mathscr{P}{ }_{\eta}$ is $\mathscr{L}^{\natural}$ for $M_{e}$ and any normal state on $M_{e}$ has a unique representative in $\mathscr{P}$ 鲅．In particular $\xi=\xi^{\prime}$ ．For $x \in N_{\phi_{1}}^{0}$ ，let $\sigma_{i / 4}^{\phi_{1}}(x)=x_{1}-x_{2}+i\left(x_{3}-x_{4}\right)$ with $x_{i} \geqq 0$ ．Linear combination of the above result yields $\eta_{1}(y)=\eta_{1}^{\prime}(y)$ for $y=\sigma_{-i / 4}^{\phi_{1}}\left(\varepsilon_{n}^{\eta}\left(\sigma_{i / 4}^{\phi_{1}}(x)\right)\right)=\varepsilon_{n}^{\eta}(x)$ and hence for $y=x$ by taking $n \rightarrow \infty$ ． By substituting $x=\varepsilon_{n}^{\eta}\left(x_{1}\right)$ with $x_{1} \in N_{\phi_{1}}$ and taking $n \rightarrow \infty$ ，we obtain $\eta_{1}\left(x_{1}\right)=\eta_{1}^{\prime}\left(x_{1}\right)$ for all $x_{1} \in N_{\phi_{1}}$ ，which shows the uniqueness．
（ $\varepsilon 1$ ，continued）We prove that $J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}}=s^{M \prime}\left(\eta_{1}\right) J\left(=J s^{M}\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right)$ for $\eta_{1}$ given above．We have $J \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{0}(x)=\eta\left(x^{*}\right)$ for $x \in N_{\eta_{0}} \cap N_{\eta}^{*}$ ．Hence $J J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} s\left(\phi_{1}\right) \eta_{0}(x)=\eta\left(x^{*} s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right)=\eta_{1}\left(x^{*}\right)$ ．Since $s\left(\phi_{1}\right)$ is $\sigma_{t}^{\eta}$－invariant，we obtain $j\left(s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right) J J_{\eta_{2}, \eta_{0}}^{1 / 2} \eta_{0}(x)=\eta_{1}\left(x^{*}\right)$ ．Therefore $J_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}}=j\left(s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right) J$（and $\left.\Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}}=s\left(\phi_{1}\right) \Delta_{\eta_{1}, \eta_{0}}\right)$ ．Due to $\sigma_{t}^{\eta}$－invariance of $s\left(\phi_{1}\right)$ ，we have $\eta_{1}(x)=\eta\left(x s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right)$ $=j\left(s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right) \eta(x)$ ．Since $\eta\left(N_{\eta}\right)$ is dense in $H, s^{n \prime}\left(\eta_{1}\right)=j\left(s\left(\phi_{1}\right)\right)$ ．
$(\delta 2)$ has been shown in the proof of $(\beta)$ ．
（ $\delta 3$ ）is a special case of（ $\delta 1$ ）．
（ $\delta 4$ ）Let $\phi=\omega_{\xi}+\omega_{\xi}$ ．Then $\phi \in M_{*}$ has a unique vector represent－ ative $\xi(\phi)$ in $\mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$ satisfying $J_{\xi(\phi), \xi(\phi)}=j(s(\phi)) J j(s(\phi))=e J$ with $e=$ $s(\phi) j(s(\phi))$ by $(\varepsilon 1)$ ．（Note that $s^{M^{\prime}}(\xi(\phi))=j\left(s^{M}(\xi(\phi))\right)$ ．）If we restrict our attention to $M_{e}$ on $e H$ ，then $\mathscr{P}_{\xi(\phi)}^{日}=e \mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$ is $V_{\delta(\phi)}^{1 / 4}$ in［2］and the unique vector representative $\xi$ and $\zeta$（both in $e \mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$ because $s^{M}(\xi) \leqq s(\phi)$ due to $\omega_{\xi} \leqq \phi, j\left(s^{M}(\xi)\right)=s^{n Z^{\prime}}(\xi)$ due to $\xi \in \mathscr{P}_{\eta_{0}}$ ，hence $e \xi=\xi$ and similarly $e \zeta=\zeta$ ）which satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|\xi-\zeta\|^{2} \leqq\left\|\omega_{\xi}^{e}-\omega_{\xi}^{e}\right\| \tag{C.58}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\omega^{e}$ indicates a vector state on $M_{e}$. Since $e \xi=\xi$, we have $\omega_{\xi}(x)$ $=\omega_{\xi}^{e}(e x e)$ and the same for $\zeta$. Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\omega_{\xi}^{e}-\omega_{\xi}^{e}\right\|=\left\|\omega_{\xi}-\omega_{\xi}\right\| . \tag{С.59}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma C. 2. (1) Let $\phi$ be a normal semifinite weight on $M$, $\xi \in H, \eta$ be a cyclic and separating vector in $H$ and $u$ be a partial isometry in $M$ satisfying $u^{*} u=s(\phi)$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\xi, \eta} \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{-i t} \eta=u^{*} \Delta_{\phi,, \xi}^{i t} \xi . \tag{C.60}
\end{equation*}
$$

(2) If $\xi \in D\left(\Delta_{\phi, \xi}^{\lambda}\right)$ and $\eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{\lambda}\right)$ for $0 \leqq \lambda \leqq 1 / 2$, then $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{\lambda} \eta$ $\in D\left(\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-\lambda}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{\xi, \eta} \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-\lambda} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{\lambda} \eta=u^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{\psi}, \xi}^{\lambda} \xi, \tag{C.61}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\phi_{u}(x)=\phi\left(u^{*} x u\right)$.

Proof. (1) We have

$$
\begin{align*}
& J_{\xi, \eta} \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{-i t} \eta=S_{\xi, \eta}\left(\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{i t} \Delta_{\phi_{\psi, \eta}}^{-i t}\right) u \eta  \tag{C.62}\\
& \quad=u^{*}\left(\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{i t} \Delta_{\phi_{u, \eta}}^{-i t}\right) * \xi=u^{*}\left(\Delta_{\phi_{u}, \eta}^{i t} \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{-i t}\right) s^{M^{\prime}}(\xi) \xi \\
& \quad=u^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{u}, \xi}^{i t} \Delta_{\xi, \xi}^{-i t} \xi=u^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{\phi}, \xi \xi}^{i t},
\end{align*}
$$

where we have used (C.8) in the first equality,

$$
\begin{equation*}
w_{t} \equiv \Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{i t} J_{\phi_{u}, \eta}^{-i t}=\left(D \omega_{\xi}: D \phi_{u}\right)_{t} \in M \tag{C.63}
\end{equation*}
$$

(due to (C.5)) in the second equality, and the formula (C.5) again in the fourth equality.
(2) For $z=i t(t \in \boldsymbol{R})$ and $\zeta \in D\left(\|_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)}\right)$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\zeta, J_{\xi, \eta}^{*} u^{*} \Delta_{\phi_{u}, \xi}^{z} \xi\right)=\left(\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-z} \zeta, u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{\bar{\nu}} \eta\right) \tag{C.64}
\end{equation*}
$$

holds due to (C.60) $\equiv \zeta_{1}$ and the following computation.

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\zeta, J_{\xi, \eta}^{*} \zeta_{1}\right) & =\left(\zeta_{1}, J_{\xi, \eta} \zeta\right)=\left(J_{\xi, \eta} \zeta_{2}, J_{\xi, \eta} \zeta\right)  \tag{C.65}\\
& =\left(s^{N}(\xi) \zeta, \zeta_{2}\right)=\left(\zeta, \zeta_{2}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

for $\zeta_{2}=d_{\xi, \eta}^{(1 / 2)+i t} u d_{\phi, \eta}^{-i t} \eta$ satisfying $s^{M}(\xi) \zeta_{2}=\zeta_{2}$. Both sides of (C. 64) is holomorphic in $\{z \in \boldsymbol{C}: 0<\operatorname{Re} z<\lambda\}$ and continuous in the closure. Therefore (C. 64) holds for all $z \in \boldsymbol{C}, 0 \leqq \operatorname{Re} z \leqq \lambda$. Hence $u \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{\alpha} \eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\varepsilon, \eta}^{(1 / 2)-\lambda}\right)$ and (C. 61) holds.

Lemma C. 3. Let $\eta, \phi$ and $\psi$ be normal semifinite weights satisfying $\phi \leqq \psi$. Then $D\left(\Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{\alpha}\right) \subset D\left(U_{\phi, \eta}^{\alpha}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{\lambda} \xi\right\| \leqq\left\|\Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{\lambda} \zeta\right\| \tag{C.66}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $\zeta \in D\left(\Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{\lambda}\right)$, where $0 \leqq \lambda \leqq 1 / 2$.

Proof. For $\lambda=1 / 2, x \in N_{\eta} \cap N_{\psi}^{*}$ and $\zeta^{\prime} \in\left(1-s^{M^{\prime}}(\eta)\right) H$, we have $x \in N_{\eta} \cap N_{\phi}^{*}$ (due to $N_{\phi} \supset N_{\psi}$ ) and

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|\Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{1 / 2}\left(\eta(x)+\zeta^{\prime}\right)\right\|^{2}=\psi\left(\left|s^{M}(\eta) x^{*}\right|^{2}\right)  \tag{C.67}\\
& \quad \geq \phi\left(\left|s^{M}(\eta) x^{*}\right|^{2}\right)=\left\|\Delta_{\varphi, \eta}^{1 / 2}\left(\eta(x)+\zeta^{\prime}\right)\right\|^{2} .
\end{align*}
$$

Since the set of vectors $\eta(x)+\zeta^{\prime}$ is a core for $\Delta_{\psi, \eta}^{1 / 2}$, we obtain (C. 66) for $\lambda=1 / 2$ and for all $\zeta$ in $D\left(\int_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2}\right)$. By (D.2) in Appendix D, we obtain (C. 66).

Lemma C. 4. Let $\eta$ be a cyclic and separating vector and $\phi$ be a normal semifinite weight.
(1) $\eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2}\right)$ if and only if $\phi(1)<\infty$.
(2) $\eta \in D\left(\Lambda_{\phi, \eta}\right)$ if there exists some $\lambda>0$ satisfying $\phi(x) \leqq \lambda \omega_{\eta}(x)$ for all positive $x$ in $M$.

Proof. (1) There exists a net $\phi_{\alpha} \in M_{*}^{+}$such that $\phi=\sup \phi_{\alpha}$. By Lemma C. 3,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi_{\alpha}(1)=\left\|\Delta_{\phi_{\alpha}, \eta}^{1 / 2}\right\|^{2} \leqq\left\|\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta\right\|^{2} \tag{C.68}
\end{equation*}
$$

and hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi(1)=\sup \phi_{\alpha}(1) \leqq\left\|\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta\right\|^{2}<\infty . \tag{C.69}
\end{equation*}
$$

Conversely, if $\phi(1)<\infty$, then $1 \in N_{\phi}^{*} \cap N_{\eta}=M$ and $\eta(1)=\eta \in D\left(\Lambda_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2}\right)$.
(2) If $\phi(y) \leqq \lambda \omega_{n}(y)$ for $y=x^{*} x$ and $x \in M$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} x \eta, \Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta\right)\right| & =\left|\left(\xi(\phi), x^{*} \xi(\phi)\right)\right|=|(x \xi(\phi), \xi(\phi))| \\
& \leqq \phi\left(x^{*} x\right)^{1 / 2} \phi(1)^{1 / 2} \leqq \lambda\|\eta\|\|x \eta\| .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $M \eta$ is a core of $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2}$, we have $\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}^{1 / 2}\right)$, i.e. $\eta \in D\left(\Delta_{\phi, \eta}\right)$.
Lemma C. 5. (1) For $\xi, \eta \in H$ and $0 \leqq \alpha \leqq 1 / 2$,

$$
\left\|L_{\xi, \eta}^{\alpha} \eta\right\| \leqq\left\|s^{\mu}(\eta) \xi\right\|^{2 \alpha}\left\|s^{\mu \prime}(\xi) \eta\right\|^{1-2 \alpha} \leqq\|\xi\|^{2 \alpha}\|\eta\|^{1-2 \alpha},
$$

(2) If $\eta \in D\left(\int_{5,7, \tau}^{\alpha}\right)$ and $\alpha>1 / 2$, then

$$
\left\|s^{n \prime}(\eta) \hat{\xi}\right\|^{2 \alpha}\left\|s^{\mu \prime}(\xi) \eta\right\|^{1-2 \alpha} \leqq\| \|_{\xi, \eta}^{\alpha} \eta \| .
$$

Proof. Since $\left\|\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{1 / 2} \eta\right\|=\left\|s^{H H}(\eta) \xi\right\|$ and $\left\|\Delta_{\xi, \eta}^{0} \eta\right\|=\left\|s^{H}(\xi) \eta\right\|$, we obtain (1) and (2) by the Hölder inequality $a_{\beta k} \leqq a_{k}^{\beta} a_{0}^{1-\beta}(0 \leqq \beta \leqq 1)$ for $a_{k}=\left\|d_{\xi, \eta}^{k} \eta\right\|^{2}$ $=\int \lambda^{k} d \mu(\lambda)$.

## Appendix D

Lemma D. Let $f$ be an operator monotone function on $[0, \infty)$ and $A, B$ be closed operators such that $D(A) \subset D(B)$ and $\|B \xi\| \leqq\|A \xi\|$ for any $\xi \in D(A)$. Then $D\left(f\left(A^{*} A\right)^{1 / 2}\right) \subset D\left(f\left(B^{*} B\right)^{1 / 2}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|f\left(B^{*} B\right)^{1 / 2} \xi\right\| \leqq\left\|f\left(A^{*} A\right)^{1 / 2} \xi\right\|, \tag{D.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $\xi \in D\left(f\left(A^{*} A\right)^{1 / 2}\right)$. In particular,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left(B^{*} B\right)^{\lambda / 2} \xi\right\| \leqq\left\|\left(A^{*} A\right)^{\lambda / 2} \xi\right\|, \tag{D.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $\xi \in D\left(\left(A^{*} A\right)^{\lambda / 2}\right), 0 \leqq \lambda \leqq 1$.

Proof. We may replace $A$ and $B$ by $|A|$ and $|B|$ in the whole discussion. Hence we may assume that $A$ and $B$ are positive selfadjoint without loss of generality. Let $E$ and $F$ be spectral projections of $A$ and $B$, respectively such that $A E$ and $B F$ are bounded. By the assumption,
(D. 3) $\quad\|E B F E \xi\| \leqq\|F B E \xi\| \leqq\|B E \xi\| \leqq\|A E \xi\|$.

Hence $0 \leqq(E B F E)^{2} \leqq(A E)^{2}$, which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
f\left((E B F E)^{2}\right) \leqq f\left((A E)^{2}\right) \tag{D.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

By taking the limit $E \rightarrow 1$, we see that the uniformly bounded sequence $(E B F E)^{2}$ converges to $(B F)^{2}$ and hence (for example, as is clear from a uniform approximation of $f$, which is continuous due to Theorem 2.2 in [21], over the interval $\left[0,\|B F\|^{2}\right]$ by a polynomial)
(D. 5)

$$
\left\|f\left(B^{2}\right)^{1 / 2} F \xi\right\|=\left\|f\left((B F)^{2}\right)^{1 / 2} \xi\right\|=\lim _{E \rightarrow 1}\left\|f\left((E B F E)^{2}\right)^{1 / 2} \xi\right\|
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \leqq \lim _{E \rightarrow 1}\left\|f\left((A E)^{2}\right)^{1 / 2} \xi\right\|=\lim _{E \rightarrow 1}\left\|f\left(A^{2}\right)^{1 / 2} E \xi\right\| \\
& =\left\|f\left(A^{2}\right)^{1 / 2} \xi\right\|
\end{aligned}
$$

for any $\xi \in D\left(f\left(A^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}\right)$. By taking the limit $F \rightarrow 1$, we see that $\xi \in$ $D\left(f\left(B^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}\right)$ and (D.1) holds. The function $x^{\lambda}$ is operator monotone on $[0, \infty)$ for $0 \leqq \lambda \leqq 1$, which proves (D.2).

## References

[1] Araki, H., Multiple time analyticity of a quantum statistical state satisfying the KMS boundary condition, Publ. RIMS Kyoto Univ. 4 (1968), 361-371.
[2] , Some properties of modular conjugation operator of von Neumann algebras and a non-commutative Radon-Nikodym theorem with a chain rule, Pacific J. Math. 50 (1974), 309-354.
[3] , Relative Hamiltonian for faithful normal states of a von Neumann algebra, Publ. RIMS Kyoto Univ. 9 (1973), 165-209.
[4] , One-parameter family of Radon-Nikodym theorems for states of a von Neumann algebra, Publ. RIMS Kyoto Univ. 10 (1974), 1-10.
[5] Araki, H., Introduction to relative Hamiltonian and relative entropy, Lecture Notes at Marseille, 1975.
[6] -, Relative entropy of states of von Neumann algebras, Publ. RIMS Kyoto Univ. 11 (1976), 809-833.
[7] - Relative entropy of states of von Neumann algebras II, Publ. RIMS Kyoto Univ. 13 (1977), 173-192.
[8] Boas, R. P., Entire functions, Academic Press, New York 1954.
[9] Connes, A., Une classification des facteurs de type III, Ann. Scie. Ecole Norm. Sup. 4 ème Sér. 6 (1973), 133-252.
[10] Connes, A. and Takesaki, M., The flow of weights on factors of type III, Tohoku Math. J. 29 (1977), 473-575.
[11] Haagerup, U., $L^{p}$-spaces associated with an arbitrary von Neumann algebra, Colloques Internationaux C.N.R.S. 274, 175-184.
[12] Hilsum, M., Les espaces $L^{p}$ d'une algebre de von Neumann, J. Functional Analysis 40 (1981), 151-169.
[13] Klein, A. and Landau, L. J., Stochastic processes associated with KMS states, J. Functional Analysis 42 (1981), 368-428.
[14] Köthe, G., Topological Vector Spaces, I, Springer-Verlag, 1969.
[15] Kosaki, H., Canonical $L_{p}$-spaces associated with an arbitrary abstract von Neumann algebras, Thesis of U.C.L.A., 1980.
[16] , Positive cones and $L^{p}$.spaces associated with a von Neumann algebra J. Operator Theory 6 (1981), 13-23.
[17] , Positive cones associated with a von Neumann algebra, Math. Scand. 47 (1980), 295-307.
[18] Nelson, E., Notes on non-commutative integration, J. Functional Analysis 15 (1974), 103-116.
[19] Sakai, S., C* algebras and $W^{*}$ algebras, Springer-Verlag, Berlin-HeidelbergNew York, 1971.
[20] Segal, I., A non-commutative extension of abstract integration, Ann. of Math., 57 (1953), 401-457.
[21] Bendat, J. and Sherman, S., Monotone and convex operator functions, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 79 (1955), 58-71.
[22] Haagerup, U., The standard form of von Neumann algebras, Math. Scand. 37 (1975), 271-283.
[23] Takesaki, M., Tomita's theory of modular Hilbert algebras and its applications, Lecture Notes in Mathematics 128 Springer, 1970.

